REFERENCE LIBRARY

OF THE

STATE TEACHERS COLLEGE

WHITEWATER, WISCONSIN

No. 24971

Bought 13. VI. *19*29.

Students of the State Teachers College are allowed to draw the books for use at their rooms on the following conditions:

1. No book must be taken from the library until it has been properly charged to the student drawing it.
2. Bound magazines, most Reference books and Reserved books may be taken from the library at 4. p. m. and must be returned at 8. a. m. the following day.
3. All other books may be kept for two weeks.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2026

https://archive.org/details/europeinnineteen0000elip_g5k2

EUROPE
IN THE
NINETEENTH CENTURY

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

The Economic History of England.

VOL. I. THE MIDDLE AGES. *Fourth Edition.*

The History of the English Woollen and Worsted Industries.

AGENTS

AMERICA . .	THE MACMILLAN COMPANY 60 FIFTH AVENUE, NEW YORK
AUSTRALASIA	OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS 205 FLINDERS LANE, MELBOURNE
CANADA . .	THE MACMILLAN COMPANY OF CANADA, LTD. ST. MARTIN'S HOUSE, 70 BOND STREET, TORONTO, 2
INDIA . . .	MACMILLAN & COMPANY, LTD. 276 HORNBY ROAD, BOMBAY 294 BOW BAZAR STREET, CALCUTTA NORTH BEACH ROAD, MADRAS

EUROPE
IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY

AN OUTLINE HISTORY

BY

E. LIPSON, M.A.

NEW COLLEGE, OXFORD
READER IN ECONOMIC HISTORY IN THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

CONTAINING EIGHT PORTRAITS AND FOUR MAPS

THIRD EDITION

D
359
L7
1928

24971

A. & C. BLACK, LTD.
4, 5 & 6 SOHO SQUARE, LONDON, W.1
1928

First edition published in August 1916.
Second edition, January 1921.

Printed in Great Britain.

PREFACE TO THIRD EDITION

THIS book was written in order to provide students and general readers with a short survey of the History of Europe in the Nineteenth Century. The plan on which the book was based has given rise to some discussion as to the best way of writing European History. Professor Hearnshaw, for example, in his *Main Currents of European History*, after quoting the preface to the first edition, compares the different methods adopted by historians. Experience of teaching the subject for several years has convinced me that the student is most likely to obtain an intelligent grasp of European History when each country is treated, as far as possible, as a separate entity, although due recognition must be paid to the working of forces which have affected the destinies of all. I recognize, however, that there is ample room for both methods, nor is there any necessity for adopting one to the exclusion of the other.

E. LIPSON.

NEW COLLEGE, OXFORD,
December 1927.

PREFACE TO FIRST EDITION

THE traditional method of writing European History from the standpoint of international politics has been discarded in this volume in favour of a method of treatment which gives a concise and connected account—analytical rather than narrative—of the internal development of the chief European States after the fall of Napoleon. I venture to think that this latter method is more helpful for students and general readers.

E. LIPSON.

OXFORD, *June* 1916.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

PAGE
Reaction and Revolution in France (1815–1870) . 1

CHAPTER II

The Growth of the German Empire (1815–1870) . . 42

CHAPTER III

The Reform Movement in Russia (1815–1916) . . 81

CHAPTER IV

Racial and Constitutional Problems in Austria-Hungary (1815–1867) 125

CHAPTER V

The Unity of Italy (1815–1870) 159

CHAPTER VI

The Balkan States 183

CHAPTER VII

The European Concert 210

CHAPTER VIII

The New Era (1871–1914) 247

INDEX 293

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

FACE PAGE

Napoleon III. 28

Prince von Bismarck 66

Alexander II. 92

Prince Metternich 126

Mazzini 168

Count Cavour 174

Garibaldi 180

Alexander I. 214

LIST OF MAPS

GERMANY 80

AUSTRIA-HUNGARY 158

ITALY 182

THE BALKAN PENINSULA 208

EUROPE IN THE NINETEENTH CENTURY

CHAPTER I

REACTION AND REVOLUTION IN FRANCE

(1815–1870)

1815 — *Problems of French history.*

Napoleon bequeathed to his successors the problem of reconciling two divergent aims: the establishment of a form of government acceptable to France combined with the pursuit of a policy acceptable to Europe. For over half a century this problem taxed to the utmost the resources of French statesmanship. The French people were resolved at all costs to break up the settlement of 1815, which was associated in their minds with contracted frontiers and loss of national prestige. The Powers were equally resolved to preserve this settlement in all its integrity, conscious that its violation would open the door to endless confusion and the peril of a European conflagration. Three different attempts were made to devise a satisfactory solution of the problem; each in turn met with failure. The position of the Bourbons was compromised from the outset by their dependence upon the Allies, in whose baggage-train, as it was scornfully said, they had returned to France. While the crisis which precipitated their ruin was provoked by the folly of their domestic administration, their fall would appear to have been inevitable sooner or later. The Orleans Monarchy adopted a foreign policy which was in diametrical opposition to the wishes of the nation, and the support of the middle classes only retarded, but could not avert, its

1815 — ultimate downfall. Napoleon III. was more fortunate in rallying French sentiment for a time to his throne, but his very success involved the alienation of Europe, whose apprehensions were awakened by his efforts to revive the glories of the First Empire; and in the end he, too, shared the fate of his predecessors. The record of these three successive attempts constitutes the history of France from 1815 to 1870; they furnish the thread which gives unity and coherence to the period.

The Ultra-Royalists. The restoration of the Bourbon dynasty to the throne of France furnished the signal for the outbreak of political strife. The country was divided into two parties, and for fifteen years a struggle ensued which wore all the appearance of an epilogue to the more titanic conflict of 1789. The issues at stake merit attention, because in their light alone we can interpret the confused and troubled events which lead up to the cataclysm of 1830. On one side were grouped the Ultra-Royalists, the obstinate and relentless enemies of the French Revolution, inflexibly resolved not only to stem the rising tide of Liberalism, but to turn back the whole course of French historical development into reactionary channels. They represented the traditional policy of the *émigrés* who had always repudiated the Revolution, and all its works, being pledged to leave no stone unturned until they were once more entrenched in the stronghold of absolutism and privilege. Their fanaticism, the outgrowth of embittered memories, was inexplicable to the new generation which had grown up in the midst of social conditions that already seemed part and parcel of the immutable, unchanging order of the Universe. It was unintelligible even to moderate Royalists: "I do not understand your passions, your relentless hatreds," said Richelieu; "I pass every day by the house which belonged to my ancestors, I see their property in other hands, and I behold in museums the treasures which belonged to them. It is a sad sight; but it does not rouse in me feelings either of despair or revenge. You appear to me sometimes to be out of your minds, all of you who have remained in France." His counsels of moderation fell upon deaf ears. For twenty

1815 — years the partisans of the *ancien régime* had openly or in secrecy nourished the passion of revenge, waiting for the day when the turn of the wheel of fortune would place the government of France in their hands and enable them to strike a blow at their enemies. In the moment of their triumph it required a magnanimity which only the best minds could feel not to abuse their power, and to sacrifice their own feelings for the general welfare of their country. Unfortunately neither magnanimity nor moderation was a virtue which the Ultra-Royalists had learnt to cultivate, and their excesses brought upon them signal retribution.

Their programme. The leading idea of the Ultra-Royalist programme was nothing less than to revive the old order, together with certain modifications conceived not in the interests of the monarchy, but in those of the nobility. To achieve this design, they contemplated first of all the restoration of the Catholic Church to its former ascendancy, resting all their projects upon an alliance between Church and State, the altar and the throne. They proposed to endow it with whatever ecclesiastical property, confiscated at the time of the Revolution, still remained in the hands of the State; this was intended to form the nucleus for the growth of a landed Church, fortified by all the authority and prestige which the possession of land alone could confer. At the same time the direction of education, and the vast influence which springs from its wise administration, were given over to the charge of ecclesiastics. A bishop was appointed president of the University (1822), and entrusted with powers of control over the schools so extensive as to constitute almost a dictatorship of education. The Jesuits also were permitted to return to France, and to set up their own seminaries, where instruction was given gratuitously. Once the clerical party was established in an impregnable position, it could then assume the task of reconstructing the social and political system of France under the pretence of re-invigorating its spiritual and moral life. Under the cover of religious teaching the seeds of reaction would be sown far and wide, and the mind of the country thus pre-

1815 — pared for the complete transformation of the existing order. The work of the Church in teaching resignation and submission was to be supplemented by a vigorous censorship, which would enable the Government to repress every newspaper or other publication detrimental to the objects it had in view. Public opinion, fettered and controlled, was to be moulded on approved lines, and the nation was to be denied the right of free discussion lest it should awaken to a sense of the perils to which its liberties were exposed. Even foreign policy was to be exploited in a manner which would reconcile the French nation to the most sweeping changes in their domestic situation. The great writer, Chateaubriand, contended that the Bourbon dynasty would never strike deep root in the hearts of the people until it had covered itself with glory on the field of battle. "The white cockade will be established when it has once more faced the foe." Yet a stable monarchy and an endowed Church were only means to an end; primarily the Ultra-Royalists were fighting for the privileges of their own order. Nothing less than this was to be the price of their allegiance. They were bent on recovering their forfeited property and whatever rights the old nobility had possessed on the eve of the Revolution, but in addition they claimed a measure of political power from which hitherto they had always been excluded.

The upholders of the Revolution.

In opposition to the Ultra-Royalists were the moderate elements, pledged "to defend the Revolution and continue it without the revolutionary spirit." This party, in the words of their own leader, "dreamt of an alliance between order and liberty, between Legitimacy and the Revolution." Their attitude was in reality conservative, and their policy almost purely negative. They had no sympathy with extreme views, and accepted the monarchy imposed upon them by the arms of the Allies, willing to remain loyal to the King, so long as the King remained loyal to the conditions on which he held his throne. But the cardinal tenet of their faith, to which they passionately and resolutely adhered, was the determination never to relinquish their firm grasp upon the heritage bequeathed to them by the

The Charter.

Revolution. To restore the *ancien régime* with its political, social, and religious traditions was to undo the laborious work of a generation, and a second time to incarcerate the soul of the nation in the prison-house of bondage. The Moderates took their stand by the Charter, which Louis XVIII. had promulgated on his accession to the French throne. Its importance lay in the fact that it definitely repudiated the traditions of the *ancien régime*, and substituted in their place the traditions of the Revolution and the Empire. From the Revolution it took over as part and parcel of the law of France the principles of toleration, equality before the law, and admission to all public offices; from the Empire it borrowed the machinery of centralized administration. The Charter also gave the French people rights of control over the Government, which they had not possessed under the Empire. It established a legislative assembly consisting of two Chambers: one composed of peers, who were either hereditary or nominated by the Crown for life; the other chosen by election, though on a very narrow basis, the franchise being confined to those who paid £13 yearly in direct taxes. The executive alone could initiate legislation, but the Lower Chamber was allowed to reject its proposals and refuse taxes. Whatever its drawbacks, the Charter was at any rate a guarantee of constitutional monarchy and representative government; it was a social compact between the King and his people, while for all the moderate elements in the country it constituted a confession of political faith.

Louis XVIII.

Between the partisans of the *ancien régime* and the upholders of the new order no reconciliation could be effected. It was impossible to harmonize their aims or their principles. One party or the other would have to succumb, for France could not continue indefinitely to be torn by their struggles for supremacy. In the long run, as we can now see, there could only have been one issue to the conflict, though the immediate course of events was determined by the personal attitude of the King. It was fortunate for the Bourbon dynasty that Louis XVIII. was under no misapprehension as to the temper of the nation or the precariousness of his

1815 — own situation,[1] and steadfastly refused to throw in his lot with the extremists or to countenance their incendiary campaign. The condition of affairs, in fact, was parallel to that which existed in England after the Restoration of 1660. Alike in England and France the position of the restored monarch was endangered by the extravagance of those who were more royalist than the King, and whose reactionary violence and revengeful passions brought the monarchy into discredit. Alike in England and France the King, inclined to moderation and unwilling to go again on his travels, managed to steer his course safely between conflicting tendencies, and so postponed the crisis. And alike in England where Charles II. was succeeded by his brother James II., and in France where Louis XVIII. was succeeded by his brother Charles X., the bigotry of the new sovereign speedily provoked a storm of opposition which only subsided after it had driven the King headlong from his throne.

The Chambre Introuvable.

From the first moment of the restored monarchy, the Ultra-Royalists began to formulate their programme, and to stir up a flood of political passions. A general election was held after the entrance of the Allies into Paris, when the revolutionary elements had been intimidated into passive acquiescence, and resulted in a sweeping majority for the reactionaries. The new Chamber of Deputies, called by Louis the *Chambre Introuvable*, was vindictive and intemperate, and the energies of the Government were almost completely absorbed in a fruitless attempt to curb its intolerant fanaticism. Talleyrand and the Liberal ministry were at once compelled to resign, and their place was taken by the Duc de Richelieu. Richelieu had shown himself a wise administrator in the service of the Tsar whose confidence he enjoyed, and his accession to office was a pledge of more favourable terms in the peace negotiations with the Allies. His statesmanlike moderation was also the best augury for the stability of the Bourbon monarchy, but this quality did not recommend him to the Chamber which pressed upon the minister the most violent and objectionable proposals. The irreconcilables would brook no talk of compromise; they demanded the wholesale proscription of all who had incurred the taint of revolution, and the concessions made to their clamour only had the effect of stimulating them to increased exertions. They also proposed that the claims of Napoleon's creditors, who had lent money to the State on public security, should be met by the payment of only three-fifths. This breach of faith would have been equivalent to a declaration of national insolvency; it would have ruined the credit of France, and made it impossible to raise money to liquidate the war indemnity. Confronted with a grave financial crisis, the King accepted the advice of Decazes and suddenly dissolved the Chambers (1816). The step was a bold one; but it was justified by success. The verdict of the country expressed in the clearest terms its disapproval of the Ultra-Royalist programme, and a decisive majority was returned in support of the Government. The monarchy, brought to the brink of a precipice by the violence of its professed adherents, who cloaked their selfish schemes of territorial and political aggrandizement under the mask of disinterested and zealous loyalty to the Crown, had drawn back in time to avoid the catastrophe which was destined to overtake it fourteen years later.

---

[1] "There seems but one opinion," wrote Castlereagh, "that if the Allied troops were to withdraw, his Majesty would not be on his throne a week": *Correspondence of Castlereagh* (1853), third ser. iii. 32.

Fall of Richelieu.

The domestic situation was now completely transformed; the stormy career of the extremists had been arrested, and the peril of a reactionary *régime* for the moment passed away. The relations between the executive and the legislature now became harmonious, and they co-operated in the readjustment of the electoral machinery, and in the settlement of financial problems. Abroad Richelieu's administration inspired the Allies with such confidence that, at the Congress of Aix-la-Chapelle (1818), France was freed from the army of occupation. This was a great diplomatic triumph for the minister, but a group of Liberals were coming to the front, and their growing strength in the Chamber forced his retirement.

Decazes.

Decazes was placed at the head of the Government, which now leaned upon Liberal support. The most striking

1820 — measure of the new ministry was the abolition of the censorship and the emancipation of the press. and in the debate on freedom of religious discussion the Minister of Justice, de Serre, uttered memorable words: "What is man, that feeble and passionate being, that he should offer to the Almighty the help of his arm? Does he pretend to usurp His strength or to offer the aid of his own weakness? . . . The vanity of this presumption has often been shown. The centuries that are gone teach in bloody character its terrible results."[1] All political omens pointed in a favourable direction, and seemed to promise an enlightened administration, when a new turn was unexpectedly given to the course of events by the murder of the Duke of Berry in 1820. He was the younger son of the Comte d'Artois, the heir to the throne; and, as his brother was childless, his assassination involved the prospect that the elder branch of the Bourbons would become extinct. The crime was the work of a fanatic, Louvel, but it was immediately seized upon as a pretext for discrediting the Liberal ministry, and Decazes was overthrown. His fall from power changed the current of French history; it proved the starting-point of a reaction which gathered increasing strength until it provoked another revolution in 1830.

The moment was not yet ripe for the Ultra-Royalists to return to power, and the administration was therefore entrusted to Richelieu. The censorship of the press was restored, and an electoral law passed which suppressed secret ballot, narrowed the franchise, and gave a double vote to the landed interest. The result was a Royalist majority, which compelled Richelieu to retire, and placed in power Villèle, the leader of the Ultra-Royalists. His tenure of office lasted from 1821 to 1827, and afforded him an opportunity to carry out the programme whose main features we have already described. Yet while Villèle's policy was purely reactionary, his methods were more subtle and astute than those which had wrecked his party in 1816. He did not wish to alarm the country by an open manifesta-

Villèle.

---

[1] Cited, Lady Blennerhassett, "The Doctrinaires" in *Camb. Mod. Hist* x. 59.

1821–27

tion of his far-reaching designs. He curbed the headstrong impatience of his followers, who had learnt nothing and forgotten nothing, and who still believed it possible to ignore all the changes which had taken place in France since the Revolution. It is almost incredible that Villèle, a sober-minded administrator and skilful politician, should have attempted a task which upon the face of it might seem foredoomed to failure. But whether or not he misjudged the temper of the nation, he at any rate thought the experiment worth trying, and it must be confessed also that his adroit tactics came very near to realizing his calculations. In his campaign to undo the work of the Revolution, Villèle relied upon two powerful forces: the Church and material interests. With the aid of the first, he designed to utilize religious instruction as a vehicle for political propaganda, to uproot the memories of the Revolution, and to inculcate those principles of public morality which would serve as his justification for restoring the old order. With the aid of the second, he hoped to conciliate national opinion and to divert the energies of the people from political channels to the pursuit of material welfare. From the standpoint of the reactionaries the project was well conceived, and showed an intelligent grasp of the situation, while in the execution of it Villèle—adopting expediency as his guiding principle—withstood the temptation to employ hasty and ill-considered measures. He went to work cautiously and with moderation; step by step the ground was prepared, step by step the edifice was reared. The dangers which menaced the liberties of the French people during the period of Villèle's administration were greater, because more insidious, than those which confronted them in 1815, and only at the last moment did they extricate themselves from the meshes of the net which was being skilfully woven round them. Villèle's failure, indeed, was due not to the wisdom of his opponents, but to divisions in his own ranks. It was the rashness of his supporters which ruined their party when victory lay almost completely within their grasp.

The policy of the ministry, as we have said, was to regain for the Royalists their lost privileges by slow and imper-

1821–27 — *Stages of the reaction* ceptible stages; accordingly the reaction was gradual. In 1822 the censorship of the press was strengthened, and the conduct of trials for offences against the press law was taken out of the hands of juries. This measure stifled public opinion. It invested the Government with the control of all anti-clerical and anti-aristocratic publications, and enabled it to suppress any writings which might serve to keep alive the revolutionary spirit. At the same time heavy tariffs were levied on imported commodities, to the satisfaction of the landed proprietors and wealthy manufacturers, and the direction of education was given over to the Church. While Villèle by the prudence of his financial and economic administration was thus consolidating the power which the rash act of a fanatic had conferred upon the Royalist party, Chateaubriand insisted that to make their position impregnable something more was needed. It was necessary to revive the glories of the Empire, to restore to the tarnished arms of France something of the brilliance imparted to them by the victories of Marengo, Austerlitz, and Jena. Even Napoleon had recognized that the surest method of repressing dissatisfaction at home was to achieve military success abroad, and one object of his wars had been to divert men's thoughts from the despotic character of his domestic rule. The French people must be compensated for the loss of their revolutionary heritage—equality and political rights—by the revival of French ascendancy on the Continent. Chateaubriand held the opinion that France, like Rome, would be content to sacrifice liberty for empire. With this conviction he forced Villèle's hand, and at the beginning of 1823 a French army was sent across the Pyrenees to the assistance of the Spanish king, whose subjects were in open revolt. This exploit reflected great credit upon the monarchy, and in the enthusiasm which it evoked it was not observed that France had been fighting on the side of absolutism, and that French troops had been employed to overthrow the forces of Liberalism.

Villèle's failure. Chateaubriand now began to dream of gaining fresh laurels, and his thoughts turned towards the Rhine, but at this point Villèle drew back. He had been induced with difficulty to give a reluctant assent to the war with Spain,[1] and though he had turned to good account the popularity which victory had brought the Government, he refused to embark upon the more ambitious projects which the fertile imagination of the great writer was already conceiving. Like Walpole, whom he resembled in his caution and in his reliance upon the fruits of a sound financial system to build up the strength of the ruling dynasty, Villèle was averse from war and foreign enterprises. If his policy was less spectacular than that of the war-party, it had at least greater elements of stability. Chateaubriand, whose sanguine temperament underrated the obstacles imposed by practical politics, was dismissed from the Cabinet, and the Government continued without ostentation its work of social and political retrogression. To strengthen his hold over the legislature, the minister created twenty-seven new peers in order to weaken the Liberal majority in the Upper Chamber, and he also carried through a septennial act by which Parliament was henceforth to sit for seven years; hitherto members of the Lower House had retired in annual batches of fifties. In this way the instrument which Liberalism had forged in its own interests—the parliamentary system—was now turned against it. The nation itself through its accredited representatives was to place the chains of political slavery round its neck; and law, the parent of liberty, was transformed into a vehicle of reaction. Secure for the moment of his parliamentary majority, and strengthened by the accession of Charles X. in 1824, Villèle could now bring forward the measures embodied in the Ultra-Royalist programme. The most important was the indemnification of the *émigrés*, who had gone into exile at the outbreak of the Revolution and had fought in the ranks of their country's enemies. The permanence of the French Revolution had been due primarily to the economic changes which accompanied it—the transference of estates from the large landowners to a multitude of peasant proprietors.

1821–27
—

---

[1] "The invasion of Spain," wrote Canning, "was *his* [*i.e.* Chateaubriand's] work, not Villèle's": A. G. Stapleton, *George Canning and his Times* (1859), 553.

1821–27 — It was impossible after an interval of thirty years to dispossess the new owners of the soil, and an alternative device was adopted to satisfy the claims of the *émigrés* without disturbing the territorial settlement of 1790. The rate of interest on the National Debt was reduced from 5 to 4 per cent. (1825), and the economy thus effected enabled the Government to compensate the old nobility for the losses they had sustained by the sequestration of their possessions. This was followed by other measures relating to the foundation of religious bodies and the admission of Jesuits into France. But the open alliance between 'the altar and the throne,' and the growing pretensions of the priest-party, awakened the apprehensions of the nation, and the Chamber of Peers—the stronghold of Liberalism—began to display more determined powers of resistance. The attempt to alter the law of succession in favour of the eldest son, a proposal which foreshadowed the building up of great estates, was defeated; and a similar fate overtook the proposal that all publications must henceforth bear the royal imprimatur. The ministerial defeat was acclaimed with enthusiasm; and, when the King reviewed the National Guard, cries were raised from the ranks: "Down with the ministers." It was a portent of the future, but the ministry wilfully shut its eyes to its significance. Undaunted by the set-back which his policy had suffered, Villèle replied by disbanding the civic militia, re-establishing the censorship of the press, and nominating seventy-six new members for the Chamber of Peers in order to swamp the Liberal opposition. These measures constituted a departure from the course of prudent reaction which Villèle had hitherto followed. They were in reality signs of weakness and declining influence. Their violence, however, failed to overcome the hostility of the extremists, led by Chateaubriand, who regarded everything that Villèle did as coming from a tainted source. To some extent these men were actuated simply by personal motives, dislike of the minister, or resentment at their exclusion from office. But they rested their opposition primarily on grounds of principle; they vigorously denounced the pacific policy and back-stair

1827–29 — intrigues of Villèle, which in their eyes accounted for the tardy progress of the reactionary movement. They clamoured for more drastic methods, and in their exasperation were even induced to make common cause with the Liberals. Villèle resolved to stamp out the disaffected elements in his own camp, whose factious conduct was a more serious menace than the insignificant minority of Liberals, and appealed to the country. A majority adverse to the ministry was returned at the general election (1827), and Villèle, overthrown by the combined efforts of his opponents, resigned office.

Martignac. The successor of Villèle was Martignac, who attempted to conciliate public opinion by opportune concessions. He abolished the censorship of newspapers, and deprived the Jesuits of the power to give public instruction. The policy of compromise met, however, with no support either from the Liberals or from the Ultra-Royalists. There was no longer any room, in fact, for moderate men; Martignac, in trying to please both parties, pleased nobody, and so fell between two stools. The Liberals demanded that the basis of the franchise should be broadened. In the elections of 1827 they had only recruited their depleted forces with the aid of their most dangerous opponents, the Ultra-Royalists, whose sole desire at the moment had been to keep out ministerial candidates. They could enjoy, therefore, no real political security until they were rendered completely independent of assistance, which had only come to them by a singular caprice of fortune. Martignac professed to meet the Liberals half-way, and to soothe the administrative ambitions of the nation, by extending the franchise in provincial assemblies. His proposal was rejected by the extremists on both sides of the Chamber; it was not progressive enough for one party, it was too progressive for the other. Accordingly the two parties, while unable to agree on any constructive programme, again united to overthrow the ministry (1829).

Charles X. Matters had now reached a crisis. Charles X. found himself confronted by the dilemma which had faced Louis XVIII. thirteen years before, the claims of the present and

1829 — the claims of the past. He could accept once and for all the rôle of a constitutional sovereign, and openly dissociate himself from the insidious attempts of his supporters to subvert the principles of the Revolution, or he could definitely throw in his lot with the Ultra-Royalists, and make a final bid to emancipate himself from the checks imposed upon his power by the Charter. The issues for which political parties had been contending in France since the Restoration were at last clearly defined: aristocratic pretensions and clerical domination on one side; equality and secularism on the other. The King did not hesitate long in making his choice. He had always been the mainstay of the reactionary party, a thorn in the side of his temporizing and prudent predecessor. "What can you expect?" Louis XVIII. had said, when the Comte d'Artois forced him in 1821 to accept Villèle as his minister; "he conspired against Louis XVI., he conspired against me, he will end by conspiring against himself." To a generation which held the theory of popular rights Charles X. now opposed the doctrine of divine right; to progress he opposed reaction; to the Charter he opposed the prerogatives of Louis XIV. "I told you," he said to Martignac, "there is no way of dealing with these men; it is time to call halt." The day for moderate counsels was past, and when the King summoned to the administration Polignac, an uncompromising partisan of the old order, he flung down the gage to the whole nation, and made the breach irreparable. His action proclaimed to the world that he had burnt his boats behind him. Henceforth professions of ministerial responsibility would no longer serve to shield the Crown or to disguise the fact that monarchy itself was now on trial. Men began significantly to recall the fate of James II. "There is no such thing as political experience," declared Wellington; "with the warning of James II. before him, Charles X. was setting up a government by priests, through priests, for priests."

Overthrow of the Bourbon monarchy.

Polignac announced his determination "to reorganize society, to give back the clergy their weight in State affairs, to create a powerful aristocracy, and to surround it with privileges." It was easier, however, to define his pro-

1830 — gramme than to carry it into execution; and in the conduct of affairs the minister showed himself irresolute and vacillating. "He has made up his mind," it was wittily said, "but he does not know exactly to what." He fell back upon schemes of foreign aggrandizement in order to dazzle the eyes of the French nation with visions of glory and empire. An army was sent to Algiers, and its conquests laid the foundations of French dominion in North Africa. It is possible that this policy might have borne fruit. There were precedents in the history of the Revolution to justify the expectation that a vigorous offensive abroad would strengthen the hands of the executive in coping with the difficulties of the situation at home. But it was necessary not to strike before the iron was hot; and Charles made the fatal error of choosing the wrong moment for taking action. The Liberal deputies had protested in an Address to the Crown against a ministry holding office when it was not backed by a parliamentary majority. The King interpreted the protest as an insult to the monarchy, and dissolved the Chambers (1830). In the elections which ensued the Government lost over fifty seats, and was now in a hopeless minority in the Assembly. This was the occasion appointed for the *coup d'état.* An article in the Charter empowered the King "to make the regulations and ordinances necessary for the execution of the laws, and for the safe-guarding of the State." Under the cover of this provision, Charles issued on July 25 three Ordinances: (1) setting aside the recent elections as null and void, and summoning a new Chamber; (2) narrowing the franchise; and (3) silencing the press. The next day Paris, at the instigation of the journalists, broke out in revolt and erected barricades. While the signal for insurrection was given by journalists, the movement itself was organized by republicans, who had prepared for the day of revolution by establishing secret societies among the population of Paris. The ministry, taken by complete surprise, was unable to coerce the capital into submission, and a provisional Government was set up at the Hôtel de Ville under the famous revolutionary leader, Lafayette. The King now sought to revoke the Ordinances, 1830 — but it was too late; and, after a futile attempt to save his dynasty by abdicating in favour of his grandson, he passed into exile.

Significance of the Revolution of 1830.

The Revolution of 1830 was an event of great significance in the history of France. On the surface it appeared to involve no considerable changes. Although the insurrection was planned and carried through by democrats, the latter found themselves thwarted in the objects for which they had fought in the streets of Paris. The elder line of the Bourbon House was set aside, but its place was supplied by the Orleans branch. Despite the change of dynasty, the monarchy itself was not overthrown, thanks to the skill with which the politicians manœuvred the course of events. The provisional Government, installed in the Hôtel de Ville, was composed of republicans; and in their eyes the Revolution was intended as an act of defiance not only to the Bourbons, but to the European Powers who had forced upon them the national humiliation of 1815. The situation, however, was complicated by the fact that the very circumstances ultimately responsible for the downfall of the Bourbon monarchy made it impossible to establish a republic in its stead. A French republic in 1830 would have been interpreted as a challenge to Europe; and with the memories of 1789 still fresh in their minds, the Allies would have taken immediate steps to ward off the threatened danger. Thus the republicans found their hands tied; and, while registering in the Chamber their protest against the monarchical system, they were unable to win any effective support in the country. Under these circumstances the Liberal deputies were able to arrogate to themselves the power of shaping the destinies of France, and they devised a compromise which, in default of an alternative solution, gained the acquiescence of the democrats. The Crown was offered to Louis Philippe, Duke of Orleans, who was a Bourbon, but had fought in the ranks of the revolutionaries at Jemmapes. This conciliated democratic opinion, which was flattered by the deference which the new King ostentatiously paid to its prejudices, while it also served to allay the apprehensions of the European Powers. Moreover, not only did the in-

1830 —

surrection of 1830 fail to destroy the monarchy, but the modifications effected in the Constitution were insignificant. They hardly made even a pretence at giving substance to the lip-professions of the politicians in favour of popular sovereignty. The King was deprived of the power conferred by Article 14 of the Charter to make ordinances in exceptional emergencies, and the right to initiate legislation was confided to the Chambers; Catholicism ceased to be the established religion, and press restrictions were abolished. But the crying need for the extension of the suffrage, which was confined to a mere fraction of the population—28 millions being represented by 100,000 electors—met with no adequate response, and the people were excluded from sharing in a government which their efforts alone had made possible.

The divine right of the people.

None the less, it would be a mistake to minimize the importance of the Revolution, even while we avoid any exaggerated emphasis upon its popular character. It resembled the English Revolution to the extent that its significance was negative rather than positive. Alike in 1688 and in 1830 no real advance was made in the direction of democracy, since the political changes were unaccompanied by parliamentary and economic reforms, without which democracy must remain a transparent fiction. But in England and in France the divine right of the nation was henceforth substituted for the divine right of kings. There could be no question that Louis Philippe, like William III., ruled by the will of the people; and, in any struggle between the King and the nation, the latter was bound to prevail. "The King will respect our rights, for it is of us that he will hold his own." Once and for all, France rejected the principle established at the Vienna Congress—the principle of 'Legitimacy.' The excesses of Charles X. completely obscured the great benefits which the early years of Bourbon administration had conferred upon France—in the words of Decazes: "The establishment of the constitutional regime; the liberation of the territory [from an army of occupation]; the liquidation of the enormous debt which the culpable folly of the Hundred Days had imposed on France; the reestablishment of peace and security." The downfall of the Bourbon dynasty involved also the final rejection of the Ultra-Royalist programme. Whatever political power had been acquired by the clerical and aristocratic factions was now extinguished. In short, the Revolution of 1830 was the complement of the Revolution of 1789; for the future, the achievements of the revolutionary spirit—the principles of equality, secularism, and constitutional liberty—rested on secure foundations. The Charter was no longer a royal concession extorted from the weakness of the Crown and revocable at will; it had become the inalienable birthright of the nation.

The Orleans monarchy (1830-48).

The Orleans dynasty governed France for eighteen years. The period is important for the development of French institutions and the working of the representative system; but while the fortunes of parliamentary warfare swayed now to one side, now to another, the issues at stake were widely different from those which had torn the country asunder in the days of the Bourbon regime. The political and social fabric of the Revolution was no longer endangered by men of the stamp of Villèle or Polignac, and the various elements in the Assembly contended for power, rather than for principle. The protagonists of the struggle were Guizot, the leader of the Conservative party, and Thiers, the leader of the Liberal party. Both alike accepted the July monarchy, and were pledged to defend the existing form of government in all its integrity against the partisans of the legitimate monarchy on the one hand, and against republicans on the other. It is difficult to define their views with precision, since each was compelled by the exigencies of the parliamentary situation to trim his sails and seek the co-operation of those with whom they were fundamentally at variance. Guizot made overtures to the clerical interests. Thiers held compromising relations with the Radical party. Neither recognized that, in coquetting with their common enemies, they were undermining their own position and that of the monarchy itself. Their foreign policy was marked by the same indecisive and temporizing qualities. The diplomacy of Guizot rested on an *entente cordiale* with

England, a compact between the two Liberal Powers of Western Europe against the three Eastern and reactionary Powers; yet in 1846 he wilfully severed the alliance in order to establish French predominance in the Spanish peninsula. Thiers favoured a vigorous offensive abroad and opposed the *entente cordiale*; but while reviving the traditions of the Empire, his policy wore largely the appearance of a device to cultivate popularity and oust his opponents from office. The real trend of events which culminated in the overthrow of Louis Philippe must be sought for, not in the details of these party conflicts, but in the domain of foreign policy and in the gradual democratic awakening. The Revolution of 1848 came as a surprise to both parliamentary leaders, who were so preoccupied with the differences which divided them that they had lost all touch with reality. The ease with which the Revolution was accomplished is explicable only on the assumption that the Government and the official Opposition had grown completely insensible to the forces which were silently working outside the parliamentary arena for their destruction. It is necessary to give some account of these forces in order to grasp the inner significance of the period which lies before us.

Cause of Louis Philippe's unpopularity.

The fundamental cause of Louis Philippe's unpopularity was his refusal to accommodate himself to the prejudices of the French people, to shape his diplomacy on lines acceptable to the nation at large. The settlement of 1815 had left behind it humiliating memories; and ultimately, therefore, the strength of the Orleans dynasty would depend on the extent to which it gratified the national pride by the vigour of its foreign enterprises. On two occasions it was furnished with an opportunity to satisfy the French yearning for glory; it was the unpardonable offence of the King that, on each occasion, he stood between the nation and the satisfaction of its desires. The first opportunity came at the moment of his accession to the throne. Paris in 1830, as in 1789 and again in 1848, was the storm-centre of Europe; revolutionary outbreaks in the French capital convulsed every State and rocked every throne on the Continent. Hence the downfall of the Bourbons was the signal for

1830 — movements which had long been maturing in other countries to assert themselves. Belgium declared her independence of Holland; Poland broke out in revolt against Russia; even Germany and Italy witnessed faint stirrings of national sentiment.[1] The fate of these movements seemed to depend upon the part which France would play. The King was called upon to make a momentous decision whether he would remain passive or give the lead to all the revolutionary elements of disaffection. The destinies of the Orleans House hung in the balance; and, while the prudent policy of Louis Philippe may have preserved his dynasty for eighteen years, it created an irreparable breach between the throne and the people, which the passage of time served only to widen.

Foreign policy: (1) 1830.

The French people demanded that the monarchy should intervene on behalf of the oppressed nationalities. They were hostile to the settlement of 1815 which had wounded so deeply their national pride, and they still clung to the intoxicating memories of the Napoleonic Empire. Moreover, the populace of Paris, after passing through a period of chastened emotions, had suddenly burst out into a flood of insurgent passions; and their uncontrollable impulses not only swept away a dynasty, they also awakened the old missionary ardour which a generation before had sought to kindle the flames of revolution throughout the world. History was repeating itself; and burning with zeal for republican propaganda, France—as in the days of the Convention—was prepared to issue a challenge to the monarchical system and bid subjects everywhere rise up against despotism. It is hardly profitable to speculate what would have been the outcome, if Louis Philippe had given free rein to the popular passions. The result could scarcely have been other than disastrous, for the three Eastern Powers—Russia, Prussia, and Austria—would have immediately drawn together in a coalition against France. It is also unlikely that the French people, after the exhaustion of the Napoleonic Wars, and lacking the stimulus which had enabled them to drive back the invaders of their soil in

---

[1] See below, Chapters II., V., and VII.

1793, would have been able to offer effective resistance. In any case, Louis Philippe steadfastly refused to embroil himself with Europe, and give the reactionary Powers a pretext for intervening in the domestic affairs of France. He was determined at all costs to avoid war, or, as he said, "to unmuzzle the tiger." In spite of the sympathy of the French people, he gave no countenance to the insurrections in Poland and Italy, and he declined the crown of Belgium for his son. His diplomacy was skilful, because it reconciled continental Governments to the July monarchy, and quenched the danger of a European conflagration, but its finesse was lost upon the nation, which never forgave the disillusion it had suffered. 1840 —

(2) 1840.

In 1840 the international situation afforded a second opportunity to the Orleans monarchy to abandon its pacific policy and identify itself unreservedly with the national aspirations. The military achievements of Mehemet Ali, the Pasha of Egypt, had aroused the unbounded enthusiasm of the French people, who were carried away by the idea that upon his shoulders had fallen the mantle of Napoleon. The King for the moment wavered, and to satisfy popular clamour placed at the head of the ministry Thiers, who had pledged himself to champion the cause of Mehemet Ali "as a matter of great patriotic interest, a great question of the national honour." But Louis Philippe, who never relaxed control of foreign policy, recognized that the hostile preparations of Thiers involved the prospect of a European war, for the Powers had called upon the Pasha of Egypt to renounce his ambitious designs upon Turkish territory. After a few months, when the popular agitation had subsided, Thiers was dismissed. Guizot was summoned to power and remained in office till the Revolution. In his tortuous diplomacy the nation found little occasion for pride or satisfaction: Lamartine summed up the situation in a telling phrase, *La France s'ennuyait*; and from the boredom of the French people sprang the Revolution.

Internal policy.

While Louis Philippe fought his subjects single-handed on matters of foreign policy, imposing an unpopular peace upon a nation in love with glory, his conduct of internal affairs was equally not calculated to conciliate public opinion. The foundations of the monarchy crumbled silently away beneath his feet, until the ease with which the King was overthrown was a revelation even to his enemies. Chateaubriand and Thiers alike had recognized that military splendour abroad was necessary to allay the discontent occasioned by repressive action at home. But Louis Philippe, and his minister Guizot, thought it possible to deprive the nation of political rights, while refusing it compensation in other directions. Guizot described his 'system' as "resistance at home to the revolutionary movement, and such moderation abroad as enforces respect for existing treaties, while avoiding all interference in the affairs of other States." It was a fatal mistake, however, to suppose that the 'revolutionary movement' could be held in check by a policy of 'resistance': the policy of repression is generally futile unless it meets with popular approval, and is apt to recoil upon those who have recourse to it. In France popular approval was withheld from the Government owing to its foreign policy, and 'resistance' only served to strengthen the opposition. Accordingly, we have now to examine those progressive tendencies, comprehended in the term 'revolutionary movement,' which were undermining the stability of the monarchical system.

The middle-class monarchy.

The basis of Louis Philippe's throne was the middle classes (the *bourgeoisie*), who possessed the monopoly of power, and with whose aid he ruled France from 1830 to 1848. They had wrested the fruits of victory out of the hands of the populace which had borne the heat of the struggle, and had established the July monarchy in order to consolidate their position in the community as the governing class. They alone enjoyed the exercise of political rights, since the franchise was limited to those who paid 200 francs a year in taxes, and a seat in Parliament to those who paid 500 francs. Hence they were enabled to determine the composition of the Chambers and impose their will upon the whole country. Wrapped up in the pursuit of wealth, they engrossed public offices and devoted themselves to material interests. In these circumstances the Assembly had no claim to be regarded as representative of the nation; and it exposed its weakness still further by barren party conflicts, which laid bare the futility of its discussions. It was, indeed, nothing but the empty shell of a parliamentary system, and could not fail to excite derision at a time when social and economic questions were rapidly coming to the front. The dawning consciousness that economic issues are the controlling factors in society, and that true democracy must rest on economic as well as on political foundations, marked in itself an epoch. It also hastened the collapse of a regime, whose policy abroad and at home was based on timid 'resistance' to all political innovations. The grievances of the working-classes attracted the attention of republicans, whose energies in the past had been absorbed in premature outbreaks and vain appeals to revolutionary traditions; accordingly, they began to concentrate upon social and parliamentary reform as the starting-point of the new order. The process of transformation in the republican party was accelerated by the tardy recognition that its former methods of crude violence only served to alienate the mass of the nation. The beginnings of Socialism date from this period, and if only a few were prepared to accept Proudhon's maxim, "property is theft," there were many who approved of Louis Blanc's principle, "the right to work." As early as 1834 the workmen of Lyons had taken up arms in defence of their trade unions, whose existence was menaced by a law directed against industrial associations. A few years later (1842), a contemporary remarked: "The time for purely political movements in France is past, the coming revolution cannot but be a social revolution." To all this seething mass of political and social unrest the Government, content to steer its course midway between reaction and revolution, and devoid of any constructive programme, presented an impenetrable front. Guizot held that concession would be interpreted as a sign of surrender, and even if he had been willing to meet the cry for democratic reform his dependence upon the capitalists tied his hands. Thus in the eyes of the French nation the July monarchy ceased to justify itself. It did not prevent

Social problems.

1848 — the isolation of France in the councils of Europe, nor spare her the shame of diplomatic humiliations. At home it stood aloof from the progressive elements in the country, identifying itself with a parliamentary majority whose political preponderance was illusory since it was not truly representative.

'The King shall reign, not rule.'

Its inherent weakness was revealed in the manner of its overthrow, which came with startling suddenness. Louis Philippe was not content to reign without ruling, to enjoy the semblance of power without its reality. From the outset of his reign, he had opposed a strenuous resistance to the efforts of the Conservative leaders to establish a virtual dictatorship over the monarchy as the price of their assistance in dethroning Charles X. While keeping up the appearance of parliamentary government, and the fiction of ministerial responsibility, he had no intention of being a *roi fainéant*, or resigning his authority to " these princes of the tribune," as a contemporary called them, " these great vassals of the representative regime, who believed that they had a prescriptive right to direct the affairs of the country." On more than one occasion the dissensions between the King and his ministers had provoked an open rupture, and in 1837 he had sacrificed Guizot for Molé, an opportunist in policy, and a more compliant instrument, whom he maintained in office for two years in face of parliamentary opposition. In particular he refused to relax his tenacious grasp over foreign policy, and his firmness alone kept the warlike instincts of the nation in check, resolved as he was " to crush twelve Chambers rather than to make war." Accordingly Thiers, who was enamoured of the Napoleonic traditions and mortified by his exclusion from power, attacked the personal influence exercised by the sovereign as a violation of constitutional practice. Frustrated in his designs by the King, and failing to make headway in the Chamber, he began to draw near to the republican party, and to support the demand for electoral reform. Throughout the country a series of banquets was held to stir up public opinion and bring pressure to bear upon the Government. In the speech from the throne, Guizot denounced the " blind and hostile " passions of the reformers, who resolved upon a demonstration to protest against the reproach levelled at their propaganda. At the last moment, however, the Opposition leaders, dreading to precipitate the crisis, stayed their hand and revoked the announcement. Their action was taken too late. On February 22, 1848, the day appointed for the demonstration, the democracy of Paris poured into the streets; and the National Guard, called upon to maintain order, openly betrayed its sympathy with the demonstrators. Deprived at this critical juncture of the force upon which it relied, the hollowness of the July monarchy was made transparent to the republican leaders, who promptly seized the occasion to turn a demonstration against an unpopular minister into a revolution against the monarchy. After a vain effort to conciliate the insurgents by dismissing Guizot and summoning Thiers to power, Louis Philippe abdicated the throne. A provisional Government was set up under Lamartine, and for the second time a Republic was established in France.

Significance of the Revolution of 1848.

The Revolution of 1848 naturally invites comparison with the earlier movements engineered against Louis XVI. and Charles X. Speaking generally, we may say that the first Revolution was directed against arbitrary monarchy, the second against aristocratic privilege, and the third against middle-class government: in other words, legal equality was established in 1789, social equality in 1830, and political equality in 1848. The ascendancy of the *bourgeoisie* in the government of France was destroyed by the institution of manhood suffrage; and political power was now extended to the people. The July monarchy had prided itself on being the just mean (*juste milieu*) between reaction and revolution, the excesses of aristocracy and the extravagances of democracy; but, poised as it was in an unstable equilibrium, its fall was from the first only a question of time. It became the object of attack on every side, and all the forces in the country worked to its detriment. The pillars of the monarchy, as we have seen, were the middle classes, but though their authority rested on a legal basis, namely, the franchise, they enjoyed no moral or intellectual ascendancy over the rest of the community.

1848 They possessed no historical claims to be the governing class—claims which might have reconciled France to their pretensions—and, as the representatives of wealth and material power, they excited the animosity of those in whose eyes the existing social and economic order was based upon injustice. Thus the support of the *bourgeoisie* was in the long run a source of weakness rather than of strength, and Louis Philippe committed a fatal mistake in not broadening the basis of his rule. The error was the more vital, since even the support rendered him was lukewarm and precarious. Although their interests were wrapped up in the stability of the monarchy, the middle classes were really sunk in apathy and lassitude; they had reconciled themselves with reluctance to the pacific policy of the Government, and they ceased to take active interest in the barren debates of their representatives in Parliament. As matters were, Louis Philippe could only hope to encounter successfully the difficulties of his situation by turning away the thoughts of the French people in other directions; but this he signally failed to do. It was an axiom of his policy to maintain the peace of Europe, and the fact that his aim was achieved without any sacrifice of the national dignity, did not appease the susceptibilities of his subjects. He was obnoxious to the country because he disappointed its ambitions; France needed once again to be purified by fire in order to learn the blessings of peace with honour.

'The Right to Work.'

The Revolution of 1848 constituted an epoch in the history of political democracy because the extension of the suffrage transferred power from the middle classes to the community at large. It was also an epoch in the history of economic democracy because it witnessed a remarkable, though tentative, experiment in Socialism. The populace of Paris had not overthrown the monarchy merely in order to establish a republic.

> "For forms of government let fools contest;
> Whate'er is best administered, is best."

"There is no form of government," said Louis Blanc, "which may not be used as a weapon against the interests of the community. . . . The chief object to be aimed at is to make him that works enjoy the fruit of his work, to restore to the dignity of human nature those whom the excess of poverty degrades; to enlighten those whose intelligence, from want of education, is but a dim vacillating lamp in the midst of darkness; in one word, to enfranchise the people, by endeavouring to abolish this double slavery—ignorance and misery."[1] The watchword of the Revolution was "the right to work," and Louis Blanc's *Organisation du Travail* (published 1839) was the gospel of 1848, just as the *Contrat Social* of Rousseau was the gospel of 1789. The irony of events, however, associated Louis Blanc's name with an experiment of which he really disapproved. He did not advocate national workshops, but co-operative workshops which the State was to furnish with the preliminary capital, while leaving the control of the industry in the hands of the workmen themselves. This is not State-Socialism, but a form of Industrial Syndicalism, where production is organized on the basis of self-governing workshops which appoint their own officials, and are linked together with other industrial groups. One of the first acts of the Republic was to set up a "Labour Parliament" at the Luxemburg under Louis Blanc, and the decree which established it is worthy of note:

"Considering that the Revolution made by the people ought to be made *for* them;

"That it is high time to put an end to the iniquitous and protracted sufferings of workmen;

"That the labour question is one of supreme importance. . . .

"A permanent Commission shall be formed for the express purpose of inquiring into the social condition of the operatives. . . ."[2]

National workshops.

While the Commission was engaged in its deliberations —planning labour exchanges, national insurance, model lodging-houses, agricultural colonies, and a ten-hours' working day—the Government embarked independently

---

[1] Louis Blanc, *Organisation du Travail*, ed. J. A. R. Marriott (1913), p. lix.

[2] *Ibid.* p. lxii

1848–52 — upon the experiment of national workshops. The experiment was a portent of extreme significance, but being hastily conceived and ill-managed it ended at the time in disastrous failure. The *ateliers nationaux* attracted no less than 120,000 workmen from all parts of France. The Government, unable to employ them in productive or even unproductive labour, provided them with a scanty dole. "The national workshops," wrote Louis Blanc, "were nothing more than a rabble of paupers whom it was enough to feed from the want of knowing how to employ them. . . . As the kind of labour in these workshops was utterly unproductive and absurd, besides being such as the greater part of them were utterly unaccustomed to, the action of the State was simply squandering the public funds; its money a premium upon idleness; its wages alms in disguise."[1] The situation rapidly became a menace to the public order, and the workshops were abolished. The disappointed hopes of the labouring classes provoked them into armed insurrection (June 1848), and a terrible struggle took place in the streets of Paris. After four days the sanguinary conflict ended in a victory for the authorities, and with it ended also the dream of a social democracy.

The Second Empire.

It is the fatal vice of revolutions that one can never foretell their course or predict their issues. In 1848, as in 1789, those who initiated the movement planned one thing; circumstance gave birth to another. On each occasion an attempt was made to establish the political sovereignty of the people; each time the result was to call into existence a Napoleonic empire. The result of the first general election held upon the basis of universal suffrage aroused astonishment in Europe, for the conservatism of democracy had not yet become a commonplace; in the main men of moderate opinions were returned to Parliament. Among the members was Louis Napoleon, nephew of the great Emperor, who was also elected President, December 1848, by over five million votes. Three years later the Republic was overthrown by a *coup d'État*, and the Empire was erected the following year by a plebiscite of nearly

---

[1] Louis Blanc, *Organisation du Travail*, ed. J. A. R. Marriott (1913), p. lxxxiii.

NAPOLEON III.

Emperor of the French (1852-1870)

eight million votes. Thus the Second Republic shared the fate of the First; its supporters were divided among themselves, and it had earned the hatred of the democrats by its ruthless repression of the social movement. A generation after the fall of the First Empire the French people—intimidated by a system of terrorism and the proscription of republican leaders, and carried away by the glamour of Napoleon's name—resigned its sovereignty into the hands of one man, and again reverted to an imperial regime. Another effort was to be made to institute a form of government which should combine stability at home with the pursuit of glory abroad. We have now to examine the programme of the Second Empire and to see how it worked out in practice. This programme, like the Empire itself, was the outgrowth of the Napoleonic legend.

Growth of the Napoleonic Legend.

The circumstances which brought Louis Napoleon to the throne of France afford a remarkable illustration of the influence exerted by personality upon History. The personality of Napoleon I. had dominated the imagination of Frenchmen during his lifetime, it continued to dominate their imagination after his death, and it enabled his nephew—with no advantages to recommend him to the nation beyond the possession of a great name—to exploit this accident of birth to the full. It is always difficult for the διάδοχοι, the generals of Alexander, to occupy the seat of Alexander himself; and the successors of Napoleon, making no attempt to imitate their great model, were unable to fill the void which his loss created in the hearts of the French people. The restored monarchy awakened no enthusiasm in the nation at large, and the benefits which it conferred upon France in repairing the destructive ravages of the revolutionary wars did not blunt the edge of her hostility. The *bourgeois régime*, despite its services to the cause of peace, equally failed to establish a firm foothold in the country, and its sombre and materialistic background only threw into sharper relief the glorious achievements of the past. This was the seed-time, the period of the Napoleonic cult, when the thoughts of Frenchmen turned to the solitary figure in St. Helena, grieving for the harsh destiny which

1848–52 — had brought him low. They interpreted his career not with the balanced judgment of cold critical reason, but with the warm generous sympathy which transfigures what it cannot approve. They ignored or forgave the *coups d'État* by which he climbed to power; they forgot also the contrast between his professions of liberty and an arbitrary and oppressive regime; they remembered only the national hero and the Treaties of 1815.

The new reading of Napoleon's history.

The Napoleonic legend (*Légende Napoléonienne*) gave a new reading to the history of Napoleon. Even while he yet lived, it enabled him to pose as the apostle of Liberal opinions, the heir of the Revolution, who symbolized in his person the ideas of 1789. It exhibited him in the light of a saviour of society, who had conceived for Europe the vision of a golden age ripe with the promise of liberty and peace, a vision darkened all too soon by an intractable fate which postponed the accomplishment of his designs and launched him upon a sea of blood. The eager acceptance of this legend was not due to the credulity of the people, it was in reality a striking testimony to the almost pathetic yearning of the nation to honour the memory of its greatest ruler. And of all who believed in the Napoleonic traditions none did so more implicitly than Louis Napoleon. In his exile he had meditated deeply on *Les Idées Napoléoniennes*, which he expounded in his writings, and he looked upon himself as appointed by destiny to assume the mantle of his namesake. "The name Napoleon," proclaimed the President of the Republic in 1849, "stands within for order and the welfare of the people; without, for the national dignity." The message summed up in brief the programme of the Second Empire.

The programme of the Second Empire.

"The reconciliation of order with liberty"—in other words, the political education of the people—constituted nominally the design and purpose of Napoleon III.'s domestic policy. The first condition of a stable government is full recognition of its authority; a nation must learn to obey before it can learn to be free. "Order precedes liberty in historical sequence," for license is not liberty but the negation of liberty. On this ground it was held necessary to adjourn the blessings of freedom, as Napoleon I. had done,[1] in order that the community might acquire respect for authority and be schooled to obedience. "France is a great democracy which needs discipline," said a contemporary, "and no element is so fitted to represent it as the Napoleonic." Under cover of this pretext Louis Napoleon began his career as Emperor by extinguishing all the political rights of the nation, professing his intention to curtail his power by gradual stages, and admit the people into partnership. Liberty, he promised, would crown the edifice.[2] In the last years of his reign Napoleon III. undoubtedly did relax his autocracy to some extent, but his grudging concessions were prompted by the desire to conciliate Liberal opinion and not because he thought the time now ripe. The characteristics of the imperial regime can best be illustrated by giving some account of the constitution of the Empire during the period of personal sovereignty, and by indicating the nature of the modifications introduced in later years.

The constitution of the Empire: (1) The Executive.

(1) The Emperor comprised in his person all the powers of the Executive, having command of the army and navy, deciding peace or war, and initiating and administering the laws. He stood at the head of a vast centralized administrative system, which covered every part of France and concentrated in his hands enormous executive authority. As in America to-day, there was no cabinet government. The ministers had no seat in the Legislature, and did not reflect its opinions, nor were they a homogeneous body sharing collective responsibility and affording each other mutual support. Independent of parliamentary control, they were individually responsible to the Emperor, and dependent upon him alone for their position; hence they were entirely under his direction. Even in the provinces all vestiges of self-government were completely effaced: power was vested in the prefects, who were the nominees of the Emperor and carried out his will; and all the municipal officers, including the mayor, were nominated and not elected. An arbitrary police-system controlled the press and restricted

[1] Louis Napoléon Bonaparte, *Des Idées Napoléoniennes* (ed. 1860), 132, *n.* 1.

[2] *Ibid.* p. xi.

the liberty of the individual; it was dangerous to criticize the Government, and the judicial system itself was converted into an instrument of despotism. (2) The Legislature was composed of three bodies: the Legislative Body, the Council, and the Senate. The Legislative Body was elected on the basis of manhood suffrage, but every obstacle was placed in the way of the free choice of the electors, and every conceivable pressure was brought to bear in favour of ministerial candidates. Apart, however, from electoral anomalies and perversions, the Chamber had not a shadow of power or independence; it could neither initiate laws, nor even amend bills introduced by the Government. The president was chosen by the Emperor; the session lasted only three months in the year; and the budget was voted *en bloc*. The Council of State, intended in the words of the Constitution as a "body of practical men who could dispense with oratorical display," was allowed a larger share in legislation, and it prepared measures for the Chamber; but its president also was appointed by the Emperor. The Senate, whose members were all nominees of the Emperor, consisted mainly of those who had held high official rank; its function was to frame legislative proposals, to interpret the Constitution, and safeguard it against infringement.[1] Thus Napoleon III. was the absolute ruler of France. Technically his power was based upon the will of the people as expressed in a plebiscite; actually it rested upon the army. In short, the fundamental idea underlying the Napoleonic regime was that of inverted democracy, Cæsarism founded upon a popular basis.

(2) *The Legislature.*

The Liberal Empire.

After 1860 Napoleon, as we have said, was compelled by degrees to limit his autocracy and establish the Liberal Empire (1860–1870). To restore to the French people the political rights of which he had deprived them had always been the Emperor's professed intention; in later years he awoke to the perception that there was an imperative need to give substance to his promises. In imitation of the precedent set by Napoleon I., he had won over to his side the Catholics, rewarding their allegiance with the control of education, and using religious instruction as a vehicle to disseminate ideas inculcating docility and subordination to authority. But in 1859 he exasperated his Catholic supporters by joining Piedmont in a war against Austria. The progress of the Italian movement, as is elsewhere described,[1] threatened with extinction the temporal power of the Papacy, and not unnaturally it raised a storm of opposition among the French Clericals. At the same time he excited the animosity of the manufacturers. Napoleon was a free-trader, and in 1860 he signed a treaty of commerce with England which lowered the duties on imported commodities. He had a sincere desire to promote the welfare of the working classes, and entertained also the conviction that free trade would be the harbinger of peace and goodwill among nations, but his action drew down upon him the hostility of the commercial classes. The Emperor thus found himself in collision with two powerful sections of the community, whose vested interests he had compromised by his policy—the Clericals and the Protectionists; and it became incumbent upon him therefore to appeal for support in other directions. His counsellors also pressed upon him the advisability of sharing his power in order to lighten the load of responsibility which a ruler must shoulder who—like George III.—attempts to be 'his own unadvised minister.' The first step towards parliamentary government was taken in 1860, when the Senate and the Legislative Body were allowed once a year to debate, and criticize, the policy laid before them in the speech from the throne; and the concession was coupled with a decree that debates in Parliament should henceforth be fully reported. In 1861 Napoleon empowered the Assembly to vote on separate items of the budget, and in 1867 to interpellate the ministers; the following year he freed the press from many of its restrictions, and permitted the holding of public meetings. But all these measures, extorted as they were from the weakness of the Emperor by the growing hostility of the nation, failed to conciliate public opinion; indeed they were seized upon by the adversaries of the Government as instru-

---

[1] A. Thomas, "Napoleon" in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* xi. cc. 10 and 17.

---

[1] *Infra*, Chapter V.

1852–70 ments for its overthrow. The autocracy of Napoleon broke down under the weight of the combined opposition offered by all the disaffected elements in the country, the Legitimists, the Orleanists, the Liberals, the Republicans, the Catholics, and the Protectionists, who were now all united to wrest from the Emperor fresh constitutional guarantees.

Social and economic policy of the Second Empire.

As an administrator, Napoleon III. revived the traditions of the Enlightened Despots, who governed Europe in the eighteenth century; he was 'the first servant of the State,' the successor of Joseph II. or of Frederick the Great, not of Louis XIV. "The Napoleonic idea," he wrote, "is not one of war, but a social, industrial, commercial, humanitarian idea."[1] The social and economic policy of the Empire was intended to compensate France for the loss of her political rights, and the welfare of the nation was placed in the foreground of the imperial programme. "The triumph of Christianity abolished slavery, the triumph of the French Revolution abolished serfdom, the triumph of democracy will abolish pauperism." Napoleon displayed a genuine regard for the poor and a real desire to improve the condition of the people; even before his accession to power his philanthropic sympathies had found expression in a book on the *Extinction of Pauperism*. Under his energetic direction France made great strides, and an immense impetus was given to every kind of industrial and commercial activity. Credit was fostered by two important institutions: the *Crédit foncier*, which made advances on property, and the *Crédit mobilier*, which financed large undertakings; while the Bank of France set up branches throughout the country. At the same time the railway system was greatly developed, and the postal and telegraphic services established on a proper basis. Thus side by side with the accumulation of capital—the arteries of industry—went improved facilities in communication—the arteries of commerce. As a result, manufactures rapidly progressed, inventions multiplied, and production doubled itself within twenty years. The Great Exhibition of 1855 witnessed to the world the striking transformation which was taking place in the industrial life of France. Still we must remember that the real criterion of national prosperity is not the amount of wealth in a country, but the manner of its distribution. The concentration of wealth in the hands of the few may occasion grave injury to the community as a whole; and therefore the only sound test of economic progress is the condition of the working classes, upon whose physical and material well-being the foundations of society must ultimately rest. Now it is true that in ten years (1850–1860) wages rose from 10 to 40 per cent., according to the various occupations, but 'real' wages apparently fell, for the increase in the cost of living was no less than 50 per cent. The Government, to its credit, was not indifferent to social questions, although its efforts at amelioration were palliatives rather than remedies. In Paris the butchers' gild was deprived of its monopoly, and a compensation fund was formed to enable bakers always to sell cheap bread to the poor. Money was provided out of public funds for the improvement of workmen's dwellings; benefit societies were fostered, though trade unions were discouraged; almshouses were erected; and in times of distress relief funds were officially organized. In addition the Government itself became a great employer of labour, inaugurating great public works in order to prevent unemployment and to improve the appearance of the large towns. Paris especially was transformed out of all recognition, and its boulevards and buildings created the magnificent city of to-day.

---

[1] *Des Idées Napoléoniennes*, 151.

The foreign policy of the Empire.

We have now to deal with the foreign policy of the Empire, for we would emphasize the fact that the history of France in the nineteenth century cannot be understood by dwelling exclusively upon her internal development. The condition of affairs abroad reacted upon the situation at home, and the stability of the Government depended upon forces which to a large extent were beyond its control. Though he proclaimed that *L'Empire, c'est la paix,* Napoleon recognized the importance of indulging the national pride by adopting a resolute and vigorous attitude in his relations with other countries; yet whether he had any coherent design mapped out in his mind may be doubted. " He was vaguely aware," as Bismarck said, "that he needed a war," for he confessed his determination never to fall, as Louis Philippe had done, by clinging at all costs to an ultra-pacific policy. "He knew well," he told the English ambassador, "that the instincts of France were military and domineering, and that he was resolved to gratify them." But he was obliged to move with circumspection lest an act of unprovoked aggression should unite Europe in arms against him, while the nation itself would be terrified if brought suddenly to the brink of Armageddon. The traditions of the First Empire were still fresh in the memories of men, and it was necessary to reassure the world that Napoleon III. had no intention to plunge the Continent once more into a deluge of blood. His anomalous position thus carried with it the seeds of its own destruction. His inmost desire was peace, in order to reconcile Europe to his pretensions, and to realize his vast projects of a social Utopia; but to establish his dynasty he had also to satisfy the passionate longing of the French people for glory, and the pursuit of glory meant war. Nor was the Emperor adapted by temperament to cope with the difficulties of his situation. He was deficient in true statesmanship, since his means were always ill-proportioned to his ends. He had many amiable qualities, and was accessible to generous emotions; but his irresolution and timidity enmeshed him in a web of diplomatic intrigue, which gave him unjustly the appearance of a mean and scheming adventurer. In range of vision and breadth of conception he towered above most of his contemporaries, but in execution his methods were not commensurate with the greatness of his designs. He awakened aspirations without having the courage to satisfy them; and in the end he not only alienated every interest he had designed to serve, but in the moment of his downfall not a hand in Europe was raised on his behalf. At first, however, Napoleon III. achieved remarkable success. The turning-point in his career came, in fact, in 1859. It coincided with the beginning of the Liberal Empire, but the coincidence was not accidental. His autocracy was unassailable while France was absorbed in the spectacle of

Character of Napoleon III.

great feats of arms, and he was able with ease to silence opposition. But as the tendencies of his foreign enterprises were gradually disclosed, the political instinct of the nation reasserted itself, discontent once more raised its head, and the possession of sovereignty began by degrees to slip from his grasp. An account of these enterprises will serve to indicate the nature and scope of his policy abroad. 1854–56

The Crimean War.

It is the paradox of Napoleon's career that his first diplomatic venture was expressly designed to propitiate those very interests which his subsequent actions were destined in later years hopelessly and fatally to antagonize. On behalf of the Catholic party in France he laid claim to the possession of the Holy Places in Jerusalem, a claim contested by Russia as the representative of the Greek or Orthodox Church. Out of this obscure controversy, which dragged on from 1850 to 1854, although the merits of the dispute were never properly understood, developed the Crimean War, which cost the lives of over half a million men. Napoleon himself cared little about the religious aspect of the quarrel, but he could not afford to alienate his Catholic supporters. The Tsar of Russia, on his side, would make no concessions, and fresh issues were soon involved. The cloud which began no bigger than a man's hand rapidly overcast the whole sky, and the suspicions and misunderstandings of diplomatists sowed the seed of a terrible harvest. England was drawn into the conflict because she believed the integrity of the Ottoman Empire to be at stake. Her apprehensions had been aroused by a proposal of Nicholas I. to partition Turkey, for she still considered it part of her traditional policy to check Russia's advance in the south. Accordingly, at the instigation of the English ambassador, the Porte rejected a demand made by the Tsar that the Orthodox subjects of Turkey should be placed under Russian protection. In the circumstances, Russia was ill-advised in putting forward this claim, but the matter ought not to have been incapable of adjustment. However, Nicholas, feeling his dignity compromised, retorted by occupying the Danubian Principalities (Moldavia and Wallachia). His action enabled the war-party in Great Britain to force the

1856 — hand of the Aberdeen ministry, and war ensued. It is now generally recognized by historians that the questions at issue could have been settled without resorting to war; and the results of the conflict afforded no adequate compensation for the blood and treasure expended on it. The Treaty of Paris (1856), which brought the war to a conclusion, neutralized the Black Sea, opened the navigation of the Danube to all countries, emancipated the Danubian Principalities from Turkish control, admitted Turkey to the public law of Europe, and pledged the European Powers to maintain her integrity; in return the Sultan promised to his Christian subjects religious toleration and equal rights with Mussulmans. The treaty was short-lived, its terms being violated almost as soon as the ink on the parchment was dry. Turkey did not carry out her undertaking and her integrity has not remained intact, while the neutrality of the Black Sea lasted only till 1870. Above all, the Crimean War shattered the peace of Europe after it had been maintained for forty years; it ushered in a succession of wars which have transformed the world into an armed camp, and made destruction the goal of human effort and the summit of national ambition. At the moment, however, the outcome of the Russian campaign was acclaimed by the French people with an outburst of enthusiasm. It was undoubtedly a great personal triumph for the Emperor, who presided over the Congress of Paris held to discuss terms of peace, and posed in the eyes of the nation as the arbiter of European destinies. He had emerged successfully from the ordeal of arms, and had preserved from extinction, as it seemed, the traditional ally of France. In wiping out the stains of 1815 and 1840 he had covered France with glory and had attained the pinnacle of his greatness; from this time onwards his fortunes gradually declined, until he was completely overwhelmed by the catastrophe of 1870.

The 'nationalist' programme of the Second Empire.

The Treaty of Paris gave to Napoleon a new lease of power; stimulated by success, he at once began to devise ways and means to turn his prestige to account. The career of Napoleon I. had shown that the passion for glory begets in a nation an inordinate craving which is only

1856-63 quenched by defeat and suffering; the career of his nephew, in his turn engulfed in a flood of boundless ambitions, was to demonstrate the same lesson. The moment now seemed ripe to undertake the supreme task bequeathed to him by destiny as part and parcel of his heritage. The 'Napoleonic idea,' hitherto vague and ill-defined, began to acquire substance. It foreshadowed the most far-reaching designs: to remould the map of Europe, to break up the settlement of 1815, to extend the frontiers of France to the Rhine, and to emancipate the oppressed nationalities. Throughout the chancelleries of Europe the Emperor came to be dreaded as a dangerous firebrand, whose restless energy, impulsive temperament and incalculable moods were fraught with serious menace to the stability of the existing political system. The first-fruits of his nationalist programme were seen in the creation of the Roumanian State out of the Danubian Principalities,[1] which had been rendered autonomous at the Congress of Paris. A more ambitious project soon unfolded itself in the schemes for the liberation of Italy. We shall speak of this in a later chapter,[2] but we may remark at this point how Napoleon's Italian policy by its half-hearted measures succeeded in satisfying no one, and marked the beginning of the end of the Empire. To begin with, it fatally impaired his position at home by rekindling the embers of party feuds. The French Clericals were incensed at the injury to the Holy See; the French Legitimists protested against the expulsion of the Neapolitan Bourbons from southern Italy; and the French Radicals were estranged because the Emperor's abrupt withdrawal from the war left the Italians in the lurch. Outside France he lost the gratitude of Italy, and destroyed the friendship of England, by his extortion of Nice and Savoy. He alienated Austria by his alliance with Piedmont—an alliance which started the Italian movement on its course; and he alarmed Prussia by the revelation of his aggressive designs. In a short time Napoleon also deeply offended Russia by intervening in support of Poland during the insurrection of 1863.[3] In France feeling ran high in favour of the Poles, and the Emperor could have rallied all parties to his side by taking up arms on their behalf. To encourage Polish nationality was not only in accordance with the Napoleonic idea, it also appealed to all the traditional instincts of the French people. But England and Austria remained passive, and Napoleon found it impossible to do more than lodge a diplomatic protest which irritated Russia without appeasing the nation. The glory of the Second Empire was waning fast; it set for ever after the Mexican catastrophe.

---

[1] *Infra*, Chapter VI. [2] Chapter V. [3] *Infra*, Chapter VII.

The Mexican episode.

The Mexican incident, more than anything else in Napoleon's reign, served to illustrate the unstable imagination of the Emperor, his passion for grandiose and fantastic schemes, and lack of forethought and iron resolution to carry his schemes to a successful conclusion. Foiled in his European enterprises, he entertained the design of building up a Catholic and Latin empire in the New World to serve as a counteracting force to Anglo-Saxon influences. He found his opportunity in Mexico, which was distracted by internal dissensions and unable to resist aggression. A pretext for intervention soon offered itself. In 1861 the Government, owing to its financial embarrassments, suspended payments to foreign creditors for two years. Great Britain, France and Spain, after protesting in vain against this breach of faith, sent troops to enforce the rights of their subjects, though they disclaimed any intention "of exercising in the internal affairs of Mexico any influence calculated to infringe the right of the Mexican nation to choose and constitute freely the forms of its government." The country submitted, but Napoleon now disclosed his plan to overthrow the Mexican Republic and set up a Roman Catholic monarchy with Maximilian, the brother of the Austrian Emperor, as its sovereign (1864). For a time the French forces carried everything before them, but the following year the United States, released from civil war, remonstrated against the violation of the Monroe principle which forbids the intervention of European Powers in the New World. Napoleon was confronted with the alternative of withdrawing his troops, or carrying on the struggle to the bitter end against the Mexican nation and the United

States. He chose the former; in 1867 the French army embarked, and Maximilian, who refused to desert his supporters by abdicating the throne, was captured and shot. This disastrous conclusion to the Mexican expedition made a deep impression upon the French people. The Imperial Government had wasted men and money upon an undertaking foredoomed to failure from the outset; it had suffered humiliation at the hands of the United States, and it had dishonoured the name of France by encouraging a foreign prince to face a dangerous enterprise and then abandoning him to his fate.

The end of the Empire.

The position of Napoleon was now precarious in the extreme. The efforts of the Liberal Opposition in the Chambers to establish a constitutional system of government were redoubled. Despite the plebiscite of 1870, in which the nation seemed to reassert its confidence in Napoleon, it became evident that a successful war alone could retrieve the fortunes of the Empire, and check the flood of democratic opinion which was threatening to engulf it. The course of events which led up to the Franco-Prussian War will be discussed in a subsequent chapter.[1] The war itself proved fatal to the Empire, which had lost its hold upon the affections of the nation and was discredited by the repeated failure of its foreign enterprises. The hour had at last come to establish a form of government which should no longer be required to stake its existence upon the success of its diplomatic ventures. Three days after the capitulation of the French army at Sedan (September 1, 1870), the Assembly proclaimed the Third Republic.

---

[1] *Infra*, p. 75.

CHAPTER II

THE GROWTH OF THE GERMAN EMPIRE

(1815–1870)

1815

The growth of nationalities.

THE outstanding feature of European history in the nineteenth century is the growth of nationalities. Napoleon I. had found his greatest strength, as one of his ministers confessed, in the dilatoriness and blunders of other Governments. The cause of his overthrow was an outburst of intense national feeling which shattered for ever his dreams of a world-wide empire. The awakening of the nations, as the result of foreign conquest, set in motion a force destined to remould the map of Europe and call into existence a new political system. This was the principle of nationality, which has affected so profoundly the development of Europe and created problems of the most vital importance whose solution still lies in the future.

Germany before the French Revolution.

Nowhere was the strength of Napoleon greater than in Germany, nowhere was the reaction against his domination more far-reaching in its consequences. On the eve of the French Revolution, Germany was the most divided country in Europe. It comprised over two hundred States owning a nominal obedience to the Emperor, but practically independent in the management of their internal affairs and in their external relations with one another. Austria enjoyed the precedency, and the imperial dignity was vested in the House of the Habsburgs, but Prussia was the stronger military power, and therefore a formidable rival. The rest of the German principalities grouped themselves round Austria or Prussia, while clinging strenuously to their independence and jealously resisting any encroachment upon their sovereign rights. The only bond between the various States, apart from their shadowy allegiance to the Emperor, was the Diet composed of representatives sent by German princes and towns. These representatives were not national deputies concerned with the welfare of the country as a whole, but envoys charged with a definite mission. The Diet was thus a congress of ambassadors rather than a parliament; it was devoid of authority, possessing neither revenues nor armed forces. It continued to survive not because it served any useful purpose, but as a harmless relic of the Mediæval Empire. This was the political condition of Germany at the end of the eighteenth century; yet at the dawn of the Middle Ages it had displayed greater political cohesion than either England or France. But in Western Europe a succession of competent rulers steadily pursued the single aim of establishing their power on a firm basis, utilizing all their resources to build up a strong central Government. In Germany, on the other hand, the royal house had inherited from Charlemagne a legacy which was fatal to its political fortunes, namely, the Holy Roman Empire. In the early Middle Ages men could not bring themselves to believe that the Roman Empire had ceased to exist, and when the great Frankish king was crowned Emperor in A.D. 800, he came to be regarded as the lineal successor of the Cæsars, a claim to which the extent of his dominions gave him some pretensions. After his death, his empire broke up and the imperial title subsequently lapsed, until it was renewed by Otto I., King of Germany. Henceforth it was the dream of every German ruler to be crowned in Rome as Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire. In reality, as Voltaire remarked, the Holy Roman Empire was neither holy, Roman, nor an empire, and Germany paid dearly for her ambition to rule the world. The influence of the Empire was negligible in most parts of Europe—in England, France, Spain and Scandinavia—but it had a disastrous effect upon Germany herself. The attempt of her rulers to establish their authority in Italy involved them in a bitter conflict with the Papacy, which eventually destroyed the strongest dynasty that Germany had known—

the Hohenstaufen. It distracted their energies, impaired their resources, and left them powerless to cope with the disruptive forces of the feudal system. In the absence of the king, engaged in perpetual expeditions to Italy, the great fiefs established themselves in an impregnable position, usurping sovereign prerogatives and reducing the central Government to impotence. The Reformation and the Thirty Years' War which followed from it completed the disintegration of Germany. It shattered the belief in the Holy Roman Empire. It divided the country into two hostile camps, Protestants and Catholics, and it enabled the princes to extend their power enormously by the absorption of ecclesiastical revenues and property. It left Germany weak and exhausted, with no coherent principles to furnish the basis for a stable political system, but with a multitude of small States oscillating uneasily between the Courts of Vienna and Berlin.

Effects of Napoleon's career on Germany.

It is one of the ironies of history that Napoleon was the creator of modern Germany. Directly by his constructive statesmanship, and indirectly by the results which opposition to his rule aroused, he contributed to the formation of a united Germany and laid the foundations of the German Empire. In the first place he reorganized the German state-system by an extensive redistribution of territorial power. He reduced the number of independent States from over two hundred to thirty-nine. He swept away a crowd of petty principalities, ruled over by imperial knights and covering but a few square miles in area, and abolished the free cities with the exception of Hamburg, Frankfort, Bremen and Lübeck. This cleared the ground of all the small sovereignties which had hitherto encumbered it; to this extent, therefore, it simplified the political map of Germany and brought the prospect of federal unity within the range of possibility. On the other hand, it augmented the strength of those States which had escaped destruction and intensified their rivalry and love of independence. Equally significant was the abolition of the Holy Roman Empire in 1806, which was replaced by a Confederation of States dependent upon France. The Holy Roman Empire had long been a mere obsolete survival, yet its dissolution involved an irreparable breach with the past; it meant, in fact, that the new German kingdom was to be built up on a *tabula rasa*, a clean slate. Of its own act the Habsburg House yielded up its historic claims to be the ruler of Germany; henceforth it was possible to conceive a Germany in which Austria had no place. But the most important result of Napoleon's work was one least anticipated by him: the growth of national feeling. The War of Liberation against Napoleon differed fundamentally from all other wars waged by Germany. It was not provoked by a Government intent upon world-aggrandizement, it was the rising of a people in arms to free itself from foreign domination. Goethe had prided himself on his cosmopolitanism; the new national spirit was exemplified in Arndt's famous war song, "What is the German Fatherland?" If the generous enthusiasm which then inspired the best elements in the German people to throw off the Napoleonic yoke had been afforded scope, the history of Germany in the nineteenth century would have run a different course. It will be necessary to show how the warm hopes of German patriots were chilled by disillusionment, and how eventually the unification of Germany was accomplished not by the people, but by Governments, with consequences which have profoundly affected the subsequent development of Europe.

Causes retarding the growth of a united Germany.

For a generation after the fall of Napoleon, Germany remained in a stagnant condition. The sacrifices made by the people in the cause of freedom were forgotten or ignored, and no attempt was made by their rulers to satisfy their legitimate desire for national unity. Four reasons in the main serve to explain the fact that, for over a quarter of a century, all efforts towards the political regeneration of Germany bore barren fruit. The period which immediately follows a great war is not usually propitious for the carrying out of important reforms; the energies of a country will naturally be absorbed in the task of repairing the ravages of war and building up its material prosperity. Accordingly, Germany had first of all to recover from the exhaustion of her struggle with Napoleon and to accommodate herself to

(1) *Exhaustion.*

the new territorial conditions, before she could seriously turn her thoughts to the reconstruction of the political fabric. Another reason for the set-back to the cause of reform was the lack of agreement among German reformers. Instead of concentrating their efforts upon a common programme, they propounded a great variety of remedies. Some wanted the exclusion of Austria and the union of Germany under Prussia; others, "mostly feudalist reactionists," wished to restore the German Empire under Habsburg sovereignty; a few even advocated a German republic, one and indivisible. "Thus German unity," wrote Karl Marx, "was in itself a question big with disunion, discord and, in the case of certain eventualities, even civil war."[1] Their views on other matters were no less diverse. Problems of internal administration came at once to the front, and the champions of the old order made war to the knife upon those who upheld the social and political traditions of the Revolution. It was difficult to determine whether the War of Liberation was to be regarded as a triumph for those who professed Liberal principles, or for those who held reactionary sentiments. Bonapartism was detested by the former on account of its autocratic methods of government, and by the latter because of its revolutionary origin. In this ferment of ideas and seething mass of conflicting opinions were all the elements of barren party strife.

(2) *Party strife.*

The intellectual movement.

A characteristic feature of German history is the influence which scholars and men of letters have exerted upon the development of Germany. They gave a powerful impulse to the uprising against Napoleon; and, after the Vienna Congress had disappointed the national aspirations, the Universities—especially Jena—again served the purpose of dissipating mental apathy and focussing public opinion upon the political needs of the moment. "The generation already educated cannot serve them," wrote Metternich; "they therefore turn their attention to those who are to be educated, a plan which commends itself even to the most impatient, for the student generation includes at the most a space of four years." He complained that German Universities were inspiring the youths confided to them with contempt for, and opposition to, the legally established order; designing nothing less than to educate the people for revolution. Metternich, to whom the "union of all Germans in one Germany" was "an infamous object," watched with growing apprehension the spread of revolutionary doctrines among the youth of Germany. "A whole class of future State officials, professors, and incipient literary men, is here ripened for revolution."[1] A national society of students, known as the *Burschenschaft*, was treated as a revolutionary and dangerous organization; and matters came to a climax with the Wartburg Festival and the murder of Kotzebue—two events which were magnified into a crisis involving "the probable disruption of the united German Confederation." The Wartburg Festival (1817) was a patriotic demonstration organized by the students of Jena University to celebrate the battle of Leipzig and the tercentenary of the Reformation, but ending with a bonfire in which various symbols of reaction were committed to the flames. The incident was scarcely more than an ebullition of youthful spirits, and its significance was exaggerated out of all proportion to its real importance. It aroused the greatest alarm among the authorities, which was intensified by the assassination of Kotzebue in 1819. Kotzebue, who had become notorious from his attacks on the Universities as the alleged centres of political agitation, was particularly obnoxious to German Liberals because they attributed to his influence the 'apostasy' of the Emperor Alexander, the "protector from whom they had the greatest expectations."[2]

---

[1] K. Marx, *Revolution and Counter-Revolution* (ed. 1904), 30.

(3) *The Carlsbad Decrees.*

As the result, the Governments of Germany plunged headlong into all the excesses which spring from unreasoning panic. Metternich successfully worked upon their fears. "The Governments are now so terrified," he wrote, "that they are willing to act." Everywhere reaction set in. In vain the Duke of Saxe-Weimar—who was the patron of

---

[1] Metternich, *Memoirs* (ed. 1881), iii. 206, 300, 317.

[2] *Ibid.* iii. 254.

1819 — Goethe and Schiller, and was regarded by Austrian ministers as one of the chief authors and protectors of all the mischief in Germany—protested to the Diet that "freedom of thought and teaching must remain at the Universities; for there, in the open conflict of opinions shall truth be found by the students; there shall the scholar be preserved from *devotion to authorities*, and there shall he be raised (not educated) to independence." His plea was derided as childish stuff, "the quintessence of all revolutionary teaching,"[1] and his protest was ignored. The Carlsbad Decrees, passed by the Federal Diet in 1819, inaugurated an era of repression and riveted the yoke of despotism upon Germany for thirty years. All Governments were required to appoint commissioners whose function was to supervise the Universities and to exercise a stringent censorship over all publications. A central commission was also instituted at Mainz for the investigation of secret societies, and to accumulate evidence for the judicial tribunals. Metternich had thus achieved a distinct triumph for his policy. Events had played into his hands and he had shown great skill in turning them to account. He won over to his point of view Alexander I., the Tsar of Russia, who, posing as a Liberal, had hitherto discouraged the growth of a reactionary spirit in Germany. At the same time the King of Prussia was 'frightened' into the belief that his territories were enveloped in the meshes of a dangerous and widespread conspiracy. Frederick William III. had long been dallying with the idea of a Constitution for his dominions, which he had promised to his subjects in the momentary exaltation evoked by the fall of Napoleon. Metternich's influence now prevailed with him to renounce his intention of redeeming this promise. The Austrian statesman knew that German Liberals hoped to find in Prussia a lever to set in motion the forces of revolution, and he dreaded the 'incalculable influence' which the reorganization of the Prussian State would have upon Germany and Austria. It meant surrendering themselves at 'one stroke' to the Revolution. Accordingly he urged that Prussia "requires before every-

---

[1] Metternich, *Memoirs* (ed. 1881), iii. 271, 272.

1815 — thing a free and sound military strength, and this does not and cannot consist with a purely representative system." He recommended that the King should go no further than the formation of provincial diets "in a very carefully considered, circumscribed form."[1] His argument was reinforced by the notorious fact that constitutional experiments in Southern Germany[2] had not been attended with marked success. In Bavaria, Baden, and Würtemberg the parliamentary system had been established largely with a view to enlisting popular support against the military monarchies; but the only result had been friction and disorder.

(4) *Backward political condition of the nation.*

In his strenuous efforts to stamp out the revolutionary movement in Germany, Metternich did not owe his success entirely to his own skilful tactics. He also profited by the folly of his opponents, who ruined their cause by the extravagance of their proposals and their lack of political experience. After all, however, the various causes we have recounted were subsidiary. Ultimately the failure of Germany to realize the hopes of unity entertained during the War of Liberation sprang from the fact that national consciousness had not yet penetrated deeply enough among the great mass of the people. The demand for a united Germany was not general; it was still confined in the main to the intellectual classes, "the learned caste," whose enthusiasm was apt to outrun their discretion.

The Germanic Confederation.

We have dealt with the reasons why all efforts towards a national Government proved abortive in Germany after 1815; yet the dissolution of the Holy Roman Empire made necessary some form of political federation to take its place. On this account the Vienna Congress established the Germanic Confederation, which nominally survived no less than half a century. Its object, as stated in the Act of Confederation,[3] was to guarantee the external and internal security of Germany and the independence and inviolability of her component States. This guarantee, however, did not extend to the non-German possessions of the chief States—

---

[1] Metternich, *Memoirs* (ed. 1881), iii. 198, 301.
[2] *Infra*, p. 54.
[3] E. Hertslet, *The Map of Europe by Treaty* (1875), i. 244 *seq*.

1815 — Austria and Prussia—but it bound all the German States to render mutual support whenever required, and to make no attack on each other. The organ of the Federal body was the Diet, which was vested with the control of all federal concerns, though the members remained "separate in administrative respects." This Diet comprised two different forms of assembly. The ordinary or 'narrower' assembly contained seventeen delegates, one each for the eleven larger States, and the rest distributed among the remaining twenty-eight States. All important business, however, was reserved for the general assembly, in which every State had at least one vote, the chief States four, and a few others two or three; in all, the number of delegates here amounted to sixty-nine. A unanimous vote was apparently required for any changes affecting "fundamental laws, organic institutions, individual rights, or affairs of religion," a condition which virtually excluded every possibility of innovation or amendment. As an additional safeguard the presidency of the Diet was entrusted to the Austrian delegate; for Austria, under the controlling guidance of Metternich, was the bulwark of reaction in Germany.

Its defects. Whatever may have been the merits of this Constitution on paper, it worked out disastrously in practice. It never had a chance of success from the start; it satisfied no one in Germany save Metternich alone, who was able to manipulate it to suit his own interests. To begin with, it reproduced the dualism so fatal to Germany in the eighteenth century; it sought to establish an equilibrium of forces between the two military monarchies, although there was obviously no room for both Austria and Prussia in the Germanic system. Austrian influence predominated, and the skilful intrigues of Metternich drew the small German States to his side. His ascendancy enabled him to defeat the hopes of those who saw in the Diet the instrument for the end they had in view, the attainment of German unity. The futility of the Diet for purposes of practical reform became unmistakable when the Austrian president of the Diet pronounced the fundamental laws of the Constitution to be, like the Bible, incapable of change. In other ways the Diet soon exposed its weakness to the German people. It suffered from two defects: (1) Its members were the representatives of the German princes, and were bound by the strict letter of their mandates. Now the German princes clung tenaciously to their rights of sovereignty and jealously resisted any encroachment on the part of the Federal body. They were not prepared to surrender to the Diet a single prerogative; to employ federal terminology, they viewed the Germanic Confederation in the light of a league of states (*Staatenbund*), not as a federal state (*Bundesstaat*). In these circumstances the members of the Diet had absolutely no freedom of action, and were dependent at every turn for their instructions upon the Governments which they represented. Thus the institution of a Diet was no real step in the direction of German unity; on the contrary, it served to emphasise the territorial disunion of Germany. Particularism—the independence of the princes—had been for centuries the bane of German development; it had now captured the central Government itself. (2) The second defect was that the Diet was destitute of the necessary machinery to enforce its injunctions. It showed its weakness at the very outset of its career, when the inhabitants of Hesse appealed against the arbitrary decision of their Elector, that every act done in his territory during the French occupation was invalid. The Diet condemned the Elector, who turned refractory and declined to accept its jurisdiction. Metternich intervened on his behalf and rebuked the Austrian president for upholding the Diet's right to intervene in controversies between subjects and their sovereigns. The Diet lacked the power to reduce the Elector to submission, and its impotence not only seriously compromised its dignity but also made it abundantly clear to every Government that obedience to its decrees was optional. This was scarcely a promising beginning for the new central Government upon which Liberal sentiment had built its hopes for the future salvation of Germany, and its subsequent history was in the same vein of sheer ineptitude. It made no further attempts to protect the victims of tyranny or to solve constitutional problems of any kind, while its 1815—

1815 — dilatoriness in general matters became a byword. Its functions, in short, were strictly circumscribed in accordance with the principle laid down by Metternich that abroad the Diet should enable Germany to present a united front towards foreign countries, while at home it safeguarded the members of the Federation from Liberal assaults. Its most memorable act was to pass the Carlsbad Decrees, to which we have already alluded, and to lay down the principle that the existence of 'responsible Governments' was contrary to the German Constitution. After 1828 it ceased almost entirely to hold meetings; so far from promoting the unity of Germany it had served only to retard it.

Metternich's political creed.

It is the inherent vice of all systems of government not broad-based upon the people's will, that they are liable to be uprooted at the first gust of popular passion. Metternich was essentially an opportunist, a master in the art of diplomatic intrigue, but he built his calculations upon shifting sands. He held that "political repose rests on fraternization between monarchs, and on the principle of maintaining that which is"; and in practice this meant a league of sovereigns against their people. Although not by nature a pure reactionary, and condemning the "dreadful abuse of power"[1] of which many German princes were guilty, the keynote of his policy was necessarily reaction, since he set himself to combat those tendencies of the future which he judged destructive of the existing order. But a political system based on repression is foredoomed from the start. Karl Marx, who has left on record an acute analysis of the varied elements in German society, wrote in 1851: "The times of that superstition which attributed revolutions to the ill-will of a few agitators have long passed away. Every one knows nowadays that, wherever there is a revolutionary convulsion, there must be some social want in the background, which is prevented by outworn institutions from satisfying itself. . . . Every attempt at forcible repression will only bring it forth stronger and stronger, until it bursts its fetters."[2] In 1848 the German people made their first serious attempt to achieve at one stroke unity and constitutionalism. The overthrow of the Orleans dynasty furnished the signal, though the forces of revolution had long been maturing. The rapidity with which they now spread through every quarter of Germany showed that all classes of the community were honeycombed with discontent. The movement of 1848 wore a dual aspect. On the one hand, there was in every State a demand for free institutions; on the other, there was a demand for unity and a central representative system. It will be convenient to keep these two aspects distinct, provided it is remembered that ultimately they were part and parcel of one and the same movement.

---

[1] Metternich, *Memoirs* (ed. 1881), iii. 199, 202.

[2] Marx, *op. cit.* 2.

Dual aspect of the Revolution of 1848.

(1) The generation which fought for Germany in the War of Liberation suffered a double disillusionment. The party of German unity led by Stein saw its hopes wrecked by the incapacity of the sovereign princes to make sacrifices in the common cause of nationality. The party of German Liberals had even more serious ground for complaint. The Thirteenth Article in the Federal Act bound every prince of the Federation to grant his subjects an Assembly of Estates, that is, representative government. This promise of constitutional liberty was a formal pledge to the whole German people. The Duke of Weimar set the example by immediately granting a Constitution to his territories. But the Diet itself, the guardian of the Federal Constitution, refused to take any steps to enforce the Article, and left its execution a matter for the discretion of the individual princes. Metternich ruled that every State had the right to regulate its internal affairs according to its own views.[1] In his adherence to this principle he was not always consistent, for we have already seen how he forced all the German princes to accept the Carlsbad Decrees. Hence the liberty of German Governments to act as they pleased meant in practice that they must act as Austria pleased. In one direction alone no check was placed upon them: they could be as reactionary as they liked, and the greater number did not hesitate to avail themselves of the licence. Three South German

(1) *The constitutional movement.*

---

[1] *Memoirs*, iii. 312.

1815-48 — (a) *In South Germany.* States—Bavaria, Würtemberg, and Baden—did, however, follow the lead given by the enlightened Duke of Weimar. Bavaria was ambitious to wrest from Prussia her predominance in Germany by establishing an alliance of progressive States under her auspices. She also had designs upon Baden; and it seemed, therefore, desirable to disarm public opinion by making a show of Liberal sympathies. Confronted with this danger from Bavaria, the ruler of Baden granted a Constitution in order to strengthen the popularity of his House and win the favour of the Emperor Alexander. In Würtemberg the traditions of a constitutional regime still survived, and a Constitution on modern lines ought to have met with success. The experiment failed owing to the obstructive tactics of the aristocratic and clerical factions, which would rest content with nothing less than the restoration of their mediæval privileges; accordingly, the scheme proved abortive. As to the other minor States, it is sufficient to remark that Liberal principles made no real headway. After all, the fate of the constitutional movement in Germany (b) *In Prussia.* was necessarily bound up with the attitude of Prussia, whose extent of territory and military resources made her inevitably the chief German Power. As Karl Marx afterwards wrote: "Without a fundamental change in the policy and constitution" of either Austria or Prussia, "no secondary efforts and victories would be of any avail." The Prussian King, a man of weak though obstinate character, long oscillated between reaction and progress. For a time it appeared as though his minister, Hardenberg, who with Stein had raised up Prussia from her degradation, would carry the day in favour of a Liberal programme. But Austria drew her the other way, and after 1818 Alexander, no longer a 'Jacobin,' also ranged himself by the side of Austria. The union of Austria and Russia proved irresistible; and, as we have already shown, Metternich's influence triumphed. It must be acknowledged, also, that the constitutional problem in Prussia was extremely complicated; however simple the issue might seem to doctrinaire Liberals, practical statesmen had to recognize the difficulties with which their path was strewn. Prussia was not a consolidated State, but a mosaic of scattered provinces. There was local patriotism, but little national feeling, and a bureaucratic Government was the sole bond between territories so diverse as the Rhine lands, East and West Prussia, and the Polish provinces. The energies of her statesmen were therefore naturally absorbed in the task of assimilating the extensive acquisitions made in 1815, which at once doubled the population and created the need for scientific frontiers. Apart from the pressing problems of internal administration, there was a great confusion of political parties, combined with all the baneful effects of a rigid social system. Prussia, now as always, was "the classic land of *Junkertum*, and militarism"; and the pretensions of the 'squirearchy' and the dominance of military traditions were fatal to orderly constitutional development. Ultimately the tardy progress of Liberalism was due to the Prussian temperament. The basis of all Liberal principles is individualism. The demand for free institutions—that is, for liberty of thought and action—is essentially a demand for the rights of the individual. But in Prussia the individual was completely subordinated to the State, for the historical reason that the growth of Prussia was the achievement of the Prussian State. Now the sturdy plant of Liberalism could hardly thrive in soil where the individual was willing to sacrifice initiative and self-expression for the efficiency of a paternal despotism. These various considerations may serve as the explanation why the first real attempt made by Prussian Liberals in 1848 to obtain political power was so easily quenched. 1815–48 —

Frederick William IV. (1840–1861).

The effects of the French Revolution of 1830 upon Germany had been slight, although a few States, where the situation was particularly intolerable, were forced to make concessions. The main result, indeed, was to reinvigorate the spirit of repression, which had shown a tendency to subside; and fresh reactionary decrees were promulgated by the Diet. But in 1840 Frederick William IV. came to the throne of Prussia, and a new era seemed at hand. He was known to be out of sympathy with the "predominantly bureaucratic and military monarchy" of his predecessor, and not disinclined to tolerate some form of the representa-

1848 — tive system. The *bourgeoisie*, who represented the commercial and manufacturing interests, cherished the hope that they would at length be admitted to a share in Government. Although behind the middle classes in England and France in point of numbers and wealth, they felt their energies cramped by bureaucratic despotism, and desired wider scope for their political activities. Their expectations were doomed to be disappointed, for the King, upon whom they relied, was more concerned to revive feudal institutions and class privileges, in short, the "predominant social position of the nobility." In 1848, however, the time at last appeared ripe for Liberal forces to assert themselves. Upon the news of the Parisian insurrection, the population of Berlin rose in revolt and erected barricades. As a consequence of the 'March Days,' as they were called, Frederick William IV. was compelled to parade the streets wearing the colours of the German Empire, to suppress the censorship, and to summon the Combined Diet, composed of representatives from the provincial assemblies. The capitals of minor German States witnessed similar scenes. "The German people," observed a contemporary, "were at last fairly launched into the revolutionary career." Everywhere rose the cry for responsible governments and popular ministries, for a free Press, trial by jury, and religious toleration. For the moment the German sovereigns bowed before the storm. Yet the triumph of the constitutional party, whose fate depended upon Prussia, was short-lived. The Prussian *bourgeoisie* grew alarmed at the extent of their own success. The outbreak of the February Revolution in Paris had furnished a stimulus, it was now to afford a warning. It revealed itself as a protest of the working classes against the political supremacy of the middle classes; a protest, in short, against the very object which the revolution in Prussia was designed to effect. The emergence of the working classes was the last thing, however, the Prussian *bourgeoisie* wanted; above all things they dreaded lest the populace in Berlin should gain the upper hand. The march of events had produced a singular situation, parallel to that which existed in France in 1830, when the French *bourgeoisie*

The 'March Days.'

were compelled to invoke the aid of Louis Philippe. The Prussian *bourgeoisie* in their turn found the support of the monarchy indispensable as a protection against the political aspirations of the working classes. They formed a tacit alliance with the vanquished party in checking the revolutionary passions which their own example had done so much to incite. Their opposition to the Government was therefore necessarily timid and vacillating. The forces of reaction gathered strength; they had made the valuable discovery that there was really nothing to fear from the middle classes. They patiently bided their time, but when the moment for action arrived they took prompt and decisive steps. They dissolved the Assembly elected to frame a Constitution, and imposed upon the country as the gift of the King, not as the inherent right of the nation, a Constitution manufactured in accordance with the views of the Court circles. In this way the constitutional movement which had opened so auspiciously for Prussia flickered out ignominiously owing to the weakness and irresolution of its authors.

(2) *The nationalist movement.*

(2) We have now to trace the history of the corresponding movement towards a United Germany. The stronghold of the national party was in the south-west, and the desire to unite all the *disjecta membra* of the German body was naturally most insistent, as contemporaries remarked, "in the smaller States where the costliness of a court, an administration, an army, in short, the dead weight of taxation, increased in a direct ratio with the smallness and impotency of the State."[1] It is important to observe that the French Revolution of 1848 was not the origin of the German national movement, although it supplied the driving force, while the fact that Austria was paralysed by internal dissensions also materially affected the situation. As early as 1847, a meeting of Liberal representatives voiced the demand for a national parliament which should focus at a single point the energies of the whole people. The Revolution in Paris gave a powerful impulse to the national party to take definite action. On March 5 a number of Liberal

---

[1] Marx, *op. cit.* 30.

1848 leaders came together at Heidelberg and entrusted a committee of seven with the task of summoning a preliminary convention, or *vorparlament*. This met, without sanction of the Governments, at Frankfort on March 31, and ordered an election to be held on the basis of one delegate for every fifty thousand voters. The Diet, constrained by the overwhelming force of public opinion, gave its adhesion to the scheme. The German princes dared offer no resistance; even Frederick William addressed a proclamation to "my people and the German nation," in which he announced that "Prussia's interests shall henceforth be those of Germany." Events speedily indicated the extent to which Prussia was prepared to let herself be absorbed by Germany.

The Frankfort Assembly (1848).

The passionate desire of the German people to attain unity had at length crystallized in a material form. The Diet had never satisfied the people; from the outset nothing but a league of princes, it had become a worn-out institution which had long ceased to fulfil any useful object. But the German nation was now afforded a unique opportunity to make or mar its destinies. Austria, the vigilant foe of revolutions, was herself in the throes of a revolution; Frederick William and the minor German princes were equally concerned to walk warily and abstain from open antagonism. With their enemies thus momentarily disarmed, and a German parliament actually in session, victory seemed to lie within the grasp of the nationalists. If the Frankfort Assembly had achieved its purpose of giving life and substance to the national movement, the history of Germany would have worn a different aspect. There would have been no Sadowa, perhaps no Sedan; and the German Empire—built up not on the unstable foundations of militarism but on the basis of enlightened democratic opinion—would have been a guarantee of peace. But the record of the National Assembly is one of unqualified failure. It was not composed of the right men, or it lacked leaders with the vision to recognize, and the courage and skill to pursue, the right course. Karl Marx pours unlimited scorn upon "this Assembly of old women." He describes it as "an Assembly composed in its majority of Liberal attorneys and doctrinaire professors, an Assembly which, while it pretended to embody the very essence of German intellect and science, was in reality nothing but a stage where old and worn-out political characters exhibited their involuntary ludicrousness and their impotence of thought, as well as action, before the eyes of all Germany."[1] Marx was a prejudiced observer; but it seems impossible to deny that the delegates conducted their concerns in the spirit of a society of savants, intent only upon the exposition of their favourite political theories. In England the Puritan Revolution transferred the control of affairs from the monarchy into the hands of men who had received as Justices of the Peace a training in local Government, which fitted them for the part they were called upon by destiny to undertake. Germany in 1848, like France in 1789, paid a heavy penalty for the fact the 'mysteries of state' had remained a sealed book to those outside the charmed circles of the Government.

Its history.

The Assembly met on May 13. Its first task was to set up a provisional Government. This consisted of an irresponsible Vicar (Regent) of the Empire, acting through a responsible ministry. The Archduke John was nominated to the position of Regent, and his authority was recognized by the German princes. The work of reforming the federal Constitution of Germany was now taken in hand. In imitation of the precedent set by the American and French Revolutions, the 'fundamental rights' of the German nation were debated with eloquence, but the invaluable time consumed in theoretical discussions would have been more profitably spent in establishing the power of the Assembly upon an armed basis. The delegates were destitute of political knowledge, yet even the most inexperienced among them ought to have grasped the fact that in the momentary paralysis of Austria and Prussia lay their only opportunity for making the regeneration of Germany a *fait accompli*, which those two States would be bound to respect. Force was the only argument which the military monarchies understood, but from the start the Frankfort Assembly exhibited its impotence to the whole German

---

[1] Marx, *op. cit.* 53.

1848-49 — world in connexion with the Schleswig-Holstein crisis. The duchies of Holstein and Schleswig revolted against Denmark, and attempted to unite themselves with Germany. Prussia intervened on their behalf, but the European Powers declined to allow any dismemberment of Denmark; and they forced Frederick William to conclude the Convention of Malmoe (August 1848) and withdraw his troops. Thereupon the duchies appealed to the National Assembly, which protested against what it considered to be a betrayal of the German cause and rejected the Convention. The ministry, unable to exert pressure upon Frederick William, resigned, and the Assembly in the end was compelled to ratify the truce. Immediately an insurrection broke out in the streets of Frankfort, and two deputies were murdered by an infuriated mob. The rising was crushed by Austrian and Prussian troops, but henceforth the dignity and prestige of the German parliament were fatally impaired. Its vacillation had destroyed the only real basis of its authority, the support of the people; while it had now forfeited its independence by employing Prussia to suppress a popular riot. The sequel showed that the rulers of Germany were not slow to take advantage of its weakness. None the less, despite this unpromising beginning, the Assembly continued its labours on the Constitution of Germany. Two main problems confronted it: (1) the position of Austria, and (2) the form of the new federal Government.

Austria's relations with Germany.

(1) Austria's relation to Germany raised a vexed question bristling with insuperable difficulties. One solution was to include all the Habsburg dominions within the new German Empire. This was hardly practicable, especially at a moment when the Austrian monarchy appeared in the last stages of dissolution. An alternative proposition to exclude Austria altogether was one for which German public opinion appeared scarcely ripe, and was bound in any case to excite the aversion of Frederick William. Dahlmann, the Prussian representative, attempted a half-way course and brought forward a third proposal, which was incorporated as an Article of the Frankfort Constitution. This declared that "no part of the German Empire may form part of a State

containing non-German territories." Where a sovereign ruled over territories of composite nationality, the relation between his German and non-German dominions was to be one of personal union; that is, they were to form separate States—like England and Scotland under the Stuarts—united only by the common tie of allegiance to the throne. This Article spelt the disintegration of the Austrian State; it admitted the German portion, but shut out the remainder. The Austrian minister Schwarzenberg, although willing to include the Habsburg monarchy as a whole, would not consent to its virtual partition, involving as it did a most profound change in the internal structure of the Empire. The National Assembly met his refusal by the formal exclusion of Austria from the German Federation.

Prussia's position in Germany.

(2) The first problem had been solved by the elimination of Austria from a United Germany; the attempted solution of the second problem was to offer the imperial crown to the King of Prussia. The reasons why the offer was made to Prussia and why it was rejected merit careful attention. No State had experienced greater reverses at the hands of Napoleon than Prussia, which lost half her population and was burdened with an army of occupation and an immense debt. Her resurrection was the work of non-Prussians—Stein, Arndt, Fichte, Hardenberg, Scharnhorst—attracted to her service from all parts of Germany as the one State which seemed to possess the qualities of leadership for a national uprising. Her great King, Frederick II., now became a national hero—despite the fact that he had cared only for French, not for German culture, and worked purely for the aggrandizement of his own kingdom—owing to his memorable victories over the invaders of German soil. Regenerated by the reforms of Stein and his colleagues, and inspired by the patriotic teachings of Fichte and Arndt, Prussia rushed to arms in 1813, and in the War of Liberation she played a leading part. As a result of the struggle she acquired possession of the Rhine provinces, and this proved significant in two ways. Henceforth she covered more purely German territory than any other State, thus usurping the position hitherto occupied by Austria. Again, upon

1849 Prussia now devolved the task of defending the Rhine frontier against France, and as the guardian of Germany she was bound ultimately to assume the headship of Germany. Austria, on the other hand, did not hesitate to cast aside her German obligations. She alienated public opinion by an alliance with Napoleon, to whom she gave the hand of an Austrian archduchess in marriage. She made no concealment of the fact that her interests lay not towards the Rhine, but along the Danube. Her face was turned eastward; even in the eighteenth century she had sought to rid herself of Belgium, and she willingly sacrificed it in 1815 at the Congress of Vienna. Metternich confessed that purely Austrian affairs were nearer to him than Austro-German.[1] His policy was to keep Germany weak and disunited, and German patriots could expect no encouragement from one whose sole principle of Government was to crush every progressive movement. For these various reasons the national sentiment gradually fell away from the Habsburg monarchy, and clustered round the fabric of the Prussian dynasty. Yet it took Prussia half a century to summon up resolution to contest with Austria the hegemony of Germany. For many years she was content with the rank of second State, and allowed Austria to enjoy precedence in German affairs. "I could write you a long letter," wrote Gentz in 1818, "about the honour which Prussians pay to everything Austrian. . . . Metternich has fairly enchanted them." Moreover, the old loyalty to the Habsburgs, who for five centuries had been the custodians of the imperial traditions, died hard. Metternich has left on record a description of the visit paid by the Emperor Francis to Cologne Cathedral in 1818. "The people, who had forced the doors to see the Emperor, all fell on their knees instantly," while the King of Prussia stood among his subjects, looking "very uncomfortable."[2] It was this instinctive loyalty to the Austrian House, and what Bismarck called "a garnish of mediævalism"—"his romantic mediæval reminiscences of the Empire"[3]—which largely prevailed with

---

[1] *Memoirs*, iii. 304. [2] *Memoirs*, iii. 143.

[3] Bismarck, *Reflections and Reminiscences* (1898), i. 44, 47.

1849 — Frederick William to repudiate the honour proferred him by the National Assembly. He felt conscientious scruples in supplanting the legitimate claimant, and he was not prepared to run the risk of war with Austria and perhaps even with Russia. Other motives equally influenced him in rejecting the imperial crown. Conscious of his deficiency in statesmanship, he shrank from the difficulties in which its acceptance would involve him. "Frederick the Great," he confessed, "would have been the man for the occasion—as for himself, he was not a great ruler." The fact that the Constitution gave the Emperor only a suspensory veto, not an absolute one, also carried weight with him. Above all, he was resolved not to take a 'crown of shame' from the hands of a popular assembly; he would only accept the dignity if pressed upon him by the princes of Germany. In his eyes the Frankfort Parliament was a 'revolutionary' body, which lacked "a legitimate mandate owing to the want of acquiescence on the part of the ruling houses."[1] Not only did the King refuse the crown, he also withheld his consent to the Frankfort Constitution, and so sealed the fate of the National Assembly. Austria and the four minor kingdoms—Bavaria, Saxony, Hanover, and Würtemberg—followed suit, and the German Parliament collapsed when Austria and Prussia now withdrew their representatives. Twenty-eight States, indeed, approved of the Constitution, but politically they were too insignificant to counteract the influence of their more important neighbours. Thus the effort of the German people to work out their own salvation ended in ignominious failure.

Prussia's federal scheme.

Prussia had been responsible for the failure of the Frankfort Assembly to achieve the union of Germany. Austria in her turn now thwarted a scheme initiated by Prussia. This was constructed on a different basis; in place of the Constitution drawn up by the 'revolutionary' Assembly at Frankfort, it proposed a confederation of Governments united under the hegemony of Prussia. The experiment was avowedly tentative; no compulsion was to be applied to any State, and the federation was to constitute a voluntary

---

[1] Bismarck, *Reflections and Reminiscences* (1898), i. 62.

1850 — union of sovereigns. A conference was summoned to Berlin, where only Hanover and Saxony appeared to favour the idea, and they formed an alliance with Prussia, known as "The League of the Three Kings." Austria, Bavaria, and Würtemberg held aloof, but the promise of a constitution won over the national leaders (the 'Gotha' party), and the petty States therefore threw in their lot with Prussia. Hanover and Saxony proved, however, to be broken reeds. From the outset the conduct of their Governments was insincere; they entered the League with the deliberate intention of withdrawing from it upon the first occasion which presented itself, and all along they dissembled their secret hostility to Prussia's designs. The mask was torn away as soon as a proposal was broached for the summons of a fresh National Assembly. Immediately they raised the plea that the Federal Act of 1815 required the consent of all members of the Germanic body to make valid any changes in the Constitution. This objection was a mere pretext to cover their secession from the movement, for they were well aware that Austria would never agree to another National Assembly. Under these circumstances Prussia had no option but to pass over their protests, although Frederick William was already beginning to display his customary vacillation, and Conservatives like Bismarck were violently opposed to the whole project. She had, in fact, gone too far to draw back, and so, thanks to the influence exercised by Austria over Hanover and Saxony, the League of the Three Kings came to an end. In spite of their defection, the elections were held, and the Erfurt Parliament met in March 1850.

Austria's triumph. Austria now took steps to organize more effectively her resistance to Prussia's federal ambitions. The suppression of the Hungarian revolt set her free to devote attention to German affairs and to restore the political situation as it existed in 1815. It was abundantly clear that the progress of the national movement involved the exclusion of the Austrian Empire from Germany, inasmuch as Austria would never acquiesce in the separate treatment of her German territories. It was also in accordance with her traditional policy to oppose the introduction of the constitutional changes foreshadowed in the demand for a National Assembly. Hence, from the first, she protested against Frederick William assuming the rôle of German overlord, while she also repudiated all schemes for the reconstruction of Germany on really national lines. In the pursuance of these obstructive tactics, Schwarzenberg now associated himself with the "League of the Four Kings," namely, Bavaria, Würtemberg, Hanover, and Saxony. His design was to restore the old Germanic Confederation, which had become actually extinct, though legally it still survived, but to replace the Federal Council by a Directory of seven States (Austria, Prussia, the four minor kingdoms, and the two Hesses). A number of States fell in with this proposal, and so furnished a nucleus for the revived Confederation. But Frederick William refused to enter the Confederation, and Germany was thus openly divided between Prussia with her Union of petty States on the one hand, and Austria with the nascent Confederation on the other. Circumstances speedily provoked a crisis which developed into a trial of strength between the two contending forces. The Elector of Hesse-Cassel was at bitter feud with his subjects, whom he had deeply alienated by withdrawing from the Prussian League, as well as by his attack upon their parliamentary rights. He appealed to the Federal Diet, which Austria had restored, and where her influence was paramount. The Diet declared in his favour, and Austria, Bavaria and Würtemberg placed an army of 200,000 men in the field to overcome all opposition to the Elector's reinstatement. The King of Prussia now found himself upon the horns of a critical dilemma. The people of Hesse had a natural right to invoke his assistance as the head of the Union which they had joined, and he would forfeit his position as leader of the national movement if he allowed the constitutional liberties of Hesse to be trampled upon by the armed forces of reaction. On the other hand, he shrank from a conflict with Austria, which demanded that Prussia should abstain from interference with the execution of the Federal decree. The real issue at stake concerned something more than the 1850 —

1850 — pacification of Hesse. It involved the fundamental question whether the policy of the Union, which comprised only German States and professed constitutional principles, should carry the day; or whether the policy of the Germanic Confederation, which included the entire Austrian Empire and was avowedly reactionary, should prevail. The Prussian ministry cut the Gordian knot by surrendering to Austria's demands. Her army was not organized for effective resistance; and, as Bismarck afterwards wrote, "from the military point of view our hands were tied." At the Convention of Olmütz (November 1850), Prussia abandoned Hesse to her fate, and agreed to the dissolution of the Union. This was followed by the Dresden Conferences, which revived the old Germanic Confederation and the Federal Diet. Thus, as the result of three years of revolution and counter-revolution, Austria emerged victorious, while Prussia experienced deep humiliation. In a speech defending the conduct of the Prussian ministry in refusing to declare war, Bismarck uttered these remarkable words: "It is easy for a statesman, whether he be in the Cabinet or the Chamber, to blow a blast with the wind of popularity on the trumpet of war, warming himself the while at his own fireside; or to thunder orations from this tribune and then to leave it to the musketeer who is bleeding to death in the snow whether his system win fame and victory or no. There is nothing easier than that; but woe to the statesman who in these days does not look around him for a reason for war *which will hold water when the war is over.*"[1]

Prussia's military reconstruction.

The Convention of Olmütz left behind it ineffaceable memories. In the struggle for predominance in Germany, Prussia had been worsted by Austria owing to grave defects in her military system. Her rulers learnt the lesson, and henceforth their energies were absorbed in the effort to forge a weapon which should make Prussia the most formidable Power in Europe. All the instincts and traditions of her governing class were military; for, while the Austrian monarchy was built up by marriages, the Prussian monarchy was created by the sword. Accordingly the reorganiza-

---

[1] Bismarck, *Reflections*, i. 79.

OTTO EDUARD LEOPOLD, PRINCE VON BISMARCK (1815-1898).

1857–62 — tion of the army became the leading idea of Prussia's internal policy, and every obstacle, constitutional or financial, was swept aside in the pursuit of this supreme and fundamental object. It was not, however, until William I. succeeded his brother, first as Regent (1857), then as King (1861), that the work of reconstruction was seriously taken in hand. His plan was to raise thirty-nine new regiments by enforcing more strictly the obligation to compulsory service. In this way the size of the standing army was to be extended from two hundred thousand to nearly half a million, while the militia (*Landwehr*) was to be reduced from four hundred thousand to one hundred and sixty-three thousand. This scheme was opposed by Prussian Liberals, who wished to achieve the unity of Germany not at the point of the sword, but by the spread of national ideas and the force of public opinion. As they commanded a majority in the Chamber, and were in a position to refuse the necessary supplies, they appeared to dominate the situation. The King appealed to the country, but the people returned the Liberals to power with an increased majority. A constitutional crisis followed. William was resolved to abdicate rather than disband the new regiments; the representatives of the people were no less resolved to assert the right of Parliament to control the Executive. As a final resource the King summoned Bismarck to the head of the ministry (1862). All unwittingly his act proved the beginning of a new epoch for Prussia and for Germany.

Bismarck. When a list of Cabinet ministers was drawn up in 1848 during the course of the critical struggle between the monarchy and the Prussian Legislature, Frederick William IV. wrote in the margin by the side of Bismarck's name: "Only to be employed when the bayonet governs unrestricted."[1] The career of the new minister had already exhibited the qualities to which his present position was now to give full scope. He was always distinguished for his strong 'monarchical sentiments.' "My historical sympathies," he wrote in his *Reflections and Reminiscences*, describing his earliest impressions, "remained on the side of authority.

---

[1] Bismarck, *Reflections*, i. 55.

1862–70 To my childish ideas of justice Harmodius and Aristogeiton, as well as Brutus, were criminals, and Tell a rebel and murderer. Every German prince who resisted the Emperor before the Thirty Years' War roused my ire; but from the Great Elector onwards I was partisan enough to take an anti-imperial view." In the legislative Assembly summoned by Frederick William in 1847, he was the mouthpiece of the reactionary party, and during the March Days he urged the King to stamp out the insurrection at the point of the sword. He shared the prevailing sentiment in favour of German unity, but in the methods to be followed he held very different views from the mass of his contemporaries. He strongly repudiated the opinion entertained both by Frederick William IV. and by the Frankfort Assembly that "the hegemony in Germany would fall to Prussia without war, and in a manner compatible with legitimistic ideas." This expectation was founded, so Bismarck declared, upon a double error: "an under-estimate of the vital energy of the German dynasties and their States, and an over-estimate of the forces which can be summed up in the term 'barricade,' comprehending therein all the impulses which prepare the way to a barricade, agitation, and threats with street-fighting." [1] What this meant was that the advocates of a National Parliament failed to recognize that its decrees were mere paper resolutions, and that in any conflict with German princes the final word would lie with those who could summon 'brute force' to their assistance. The temporary success achieved by the revolutionary elements in 1848 was attributed not to the intrinsic strength of the popular movement, but to the fact that German sovereigns were momentarily taken by surprise, while their ministers were at heart in sympathy with the insurgents. Hence, as soon as the princes appointed ministers "who were prepared to support the prerogative without regard to parliamentary decisions," the whole danger immediately vanished, and the monarchy everywhere triumphed over the revolution. This was the light in which Bismarck interpreted the great events of 1848, and the conclusions drawn from them served to fortify his

---

[1] *Reflections*, i. 60.

1862-70

—

convictions and to steel his resolution. One idea henceforth coloured his entire outlook; it was expressed in the famous words 'blood and iron,' implying that argument is no substitute for force. He speaks scornfully in his *Reminiscences* about the 'moral conquests' of Prussia; the German Empire must be built up not by the permeation of ideas, but by the achievements of the sword.

His object.

The history of Bismarck during the quarter of a century in which he controlled the destinies of Germany, and made her the strongest military Power in Europe, is the record of statesmanship directed with sagacity, insight, and ruthless energy towards the attainment of a single object. His purpose was to end the dualism which had been the bane of the German political system by driving Austria out of the Confederation, and he steadily worked to accomplish this by war instead of by peaceable means. The conflict with France did not constitute the essence of his original design; it was intended rather as the coping stone to complete the edifice so laboriously constructed. We can best describe the scope and methods of his policy by examining his relations (1) with the Prussian Chambers, (2) with Austria, (3) with France; concluding our survey with an account of the *Zollverein* and a comparison of Bismarck and Cavour.

(1) *Relations with the Prussian Legislature.*

(1) According to his own account, Bismarck had no liking for the 'uncontrolled absolutism' portrayed in the monarchy of Louis XIV. He favoured public criticism of the Government by an independent representative assembly and by the press. His experience of court circles had convinced him that no sovereign can be trusted to display the qualities required of an absolute ruler—"impartiality, honesty, devotion to duty, energy, and inward humility," as well as omniscience and insusceptibility to flattery. But theoretical considerations were not allowed to influence his practical conduct. He had no scruples in adopting any means which conduced to the end he had in view; and if free institutions and a free press were obstacles in his path, he would not hesitate to trample on the former and stifle the latter. This became immediately apparent in his treat-

1862–70 ment of the Prussian Chambers. He offered the Opposition to include its leaders in his Cabinet, provided they accepted his military schemes. The proposal was refused, and the Assembly not only rejected the army reforms, but also withheld supplies. Bismarck now displayed his iron resolution and strength of will; in defiance of the Legislature, he proceeded to take in hand the reorganization of the army and to dispense with the budget. To govern in the face of a parliamentary majority, and to carry out far-reaching projects in the teeth of the people's representatives, was virtually to tear up the Constitution. Bismarck, however, had gauged correctly the situation. He knew that he could rely upon the army to crush armed resistance, and as a devoted partisan of the monarchy he was quite ready to employ force in its interests. Moreover, the Liberal Opposition was apparently confined to the middle classes, and the country as a whole seems to have acquiesced in the violation of its constitutional privileges. Above all, Bismarck depended upon the success of his foreign policy to overcome or to silence the hostility of his opponents. He well knew that much is forgiven to those who succeed, and that the sin which the world finds most difficult to pardon is failure. Events justified Bismarck's calculations up to the very hilt. His dazzling achievements in the field of diplomacy and war carried the nation along with him and raised him to the pinnacle of greatness. He gave to the military monarchy of Prussia a new lease of power, which only failure abroad or serious weakness at home can terminate. In short, Bismarck succeeded in Prussia where Strafford had failed in England, and Villèle had failed in France, because in depriving the nation of liberty he substituted glory to fill the void. "We are a vain nation," wrote Bismarck; "we feel hurt directly we cannot swagger, and much, even in regard to our pockets, is forgiven and permitted a government which gives us importance abroad."[1] After the battle of Sadowa in 1866 had laid Austria at the feet of Prussia, the Assembly accorded Bismarck an indemnity for having governed the country without a budget for five

---

[1] *Reflections*, i. 177.

1863 — years. In the exultation of victory, the nation forgave the unconstitutional conduct of the minister, who was henceforth assured of a majority in the Prussian Chamber in everything relating to his foreign policy.

(2) Relations with Austria.

(2) The conflict with the Prussian Chambers was not an end in itself, but a means to an end. Bismarck was not a reactionary pure and simple, and he was willing to co-operate with the representatives of the people provided they accepted his programme abroad. Here he differed from the ministers of Charles X., who looked upon foreign enterprises only in the light of a prop to their system of government at home. With Bismarck, however, the dream of foreign aggrandizement overpowered all secondary considerations, and to the expulsion of Austria from the Confederation he now bent all his energies. At the moment of his accession to power, Prussian prospects in Germany had taken an unfavourable turn. There appeared every likelihood of an alliance between Napoleon III. and Russia; and since the former would never consent to the union of Germany under the headship of Prussia, this alliance would have ruined all Bismarck's plans. The danger was averted owing to an opportune event, from which the minister was skilful enough to reap the fullest advantage. At the beginning of 1863 the Polish insurrection broke out, and in France and England popular feeling ran high in favour of the Poles.[1] Bismarck promptly offered his assistance to the Russian Government; and, by massing troops on the frontier, relieved it of all anxiety as to the attitude of the European Powers. The French Emperor, on the other hand, was compelled by public opinion to protest on behalf of the Poles; and so, without benefiting Poland, he completely shattered the Franco-Russian *entente*. In its place was now substituted an agreement between Russia and Prussia, and henceforth Bismarck was assured of a free hand in dealing with Austria. His diplomacy had been bold to the point of rashness, for if France, Austria, and England had declared war upon Russia, as it seemed not unlikely, Prussia would have had to meet the first onslaught. But though his convention

---

[1] *Infra*, Chapter VII.

1863 — with Russia deepened the hostility of Prussian Liberals, it had certainly contributed to the purpose to which Bismarck subordinated all other considerations: the overthrow of Austrian predominance in Germany.

The Schleswig-Holstein question.

The actual occasion for war between the two leading Powers of the Germanic Confederation sprang from the thorny problem of the Schleswig-Holstein duchies. These duchies, although subject to the Crown of Denmark, had maintained an independent existence for four centuries, and strenuously resisted the efforts of the Danish national party, known as the Eider-Danes, to make them an integral part of the kingdom. The situation was complicated by the fact that, while the male line of the Danish royal house appeared likely to die out, the Salic law, prohibiting succession in the female line, still prevailed in the duchies. This meant that the personal union between Denmark and the duchies would soon terminate unless the autonomy of the latter were first extinguished. A crisis was reached in 1848, when Holstein organized an insurrection against Denmark, and appealed, as a member of the Germanic Confederation, for the assistance of the German people, who espoused its cause with eagerness. Holstein and Schleswig were thus caught up in the great wave of national enthusiasm which was now sweeping over Germany; and henceforth their fate was inextricably interwoven with the destinies of the German nation. But the problem was not purely a German one; it had also a European aspect, for any attempt to dismember Denmark, and make Germany a naval power in the Baltic, was bound to raise strong opposition. Hence Prussia's intervention on behalf of the duchies was speedily cut short (Convention of Malmoe),[1] and a settlement, known as the London Protocol, was patched up in 1852, which recognized the integrity of the Danish monarchy, but granted a measure of autonomy to the duchies. This compromise proved unworkable, and the relations between Denmark and the Germanic Confederation grew more and more strained. Eventually, in 1863, matters came to a head. The Eider-Danes availed themselves of the fact that the

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 60.

1863–66 European Powers were preoccupied with the Polish insurrection to impose on Schleswig-Holstein a Constitution which practically annihilated the independence of Schleswig, thus completely setting aside the London Protocol. This gave Bismarck an opportunity which he well knew how to turn to the benefit of Prussia. "From the beginning," he afterwards wrote, "I kept annexation steadily before my eyes"; but, at the moment, he was careful not to show his hand or reveal his ulterior aims. The events of 1848 had shown that Prussia needed an ally in the event of European interference. He therefore induced Austria, whose fears of Napoleon's Italian policy[1] made her anxious to cultivate the friendship of Prussia, to accept the proposal for a joint intervention in the duchies. A legitimate pretext for action was found in Denmark's violation of the Protocol, which left England, France, and Russia without legal ground for protest. War ensued, in which Denmark was beaten and deprived of the duchies (1864). At first they were administered jointly by the two Powers, an arrangement modified subsequently by the Convention of Gastein (1865), and Bismarck availed himself of the interval to secure Napoleon's neutrality and Italy's co-operation. He realized that Austria would never consent to Prussia annexing the duchies, and therefore worked steadily to bring on war. Single-handed he forced a conflict on Austria, for the Prussian people themselves desired peace, while public opinion elsewhere in Germany supported the claims of the Duke of Augustenburg as having the best hereditary right to the duchies. Austria had no option but to accept the challenge. The decisive victory of Sadowa (Königgrätz), July 1866, proved the superiority of Prussian arms over Austrian, and it was followed by the defeat of the minor German States which had thrown in their lot with Austria. Momentous changes in the German political system were now carried through by Bismarck, which brought to Prussia an enormous accession of power and laid the basis of the modern German Empire.

Bismarck resisted William's proposal to annex Austrian

---

[1] *Infra*, Chapter V.

1866

The North German Confederation.

territory, although Venetia was ceded to Italy.[1] He was resolved to drive Austria out of Germany in order to leave a clear field for the aggrandizement of Prussia, but he did not wish to create any permanent barriers between the two countries which would prevent a future alliance against France and Russia. His moderation in this respect stands in striking contrast with the policy which, in 1871, wrested Alsace-Lorraine from France, and left behind it bitter memories which the passage of nearly half a century has served only to intensify. As a result of the Peace of Prague (August 1866), Prussia added to her territories the duchies of Schleswig-Holstein, the kingdom of Hanover, the Electorate of Hesse (Hesse-Cassel), part of Hesse-Darmstadt, and the city of Frankfort. In this way she increased her population by four millions, while the Germanic Confederation, established in 1815, was dissolved, and Austria was henceforth excluded from participation in German affairs. At the same time Prussia became the head of a North German Confederation, embracing all the States north of the Main. The machinery of the new Confederation, which Bismarck now called into existence, comprised a parliamentary assembly (*Reichstag*), elected by manhood suffrage, and a federal council (*Bundesrath*), composed of deputies from the different States. In the *Bundesrath* Prussia controlled only seventeen votes out of forty-three ; [2] and the fact that she was nominally in the minority served to veil her actual superiority and to reconcile the smaller States to their inferior position. Bismarck could afford to make illusory concessions, since the real power in all matters of consequence was vested in the Prussian king, who commanded the armies and determined the foreign policy of all the members of the Confederation. In internal affairs each Government retained a large measure of independence, and did not merge its separate individuality in the collective unity of the Federal body. On the other hand, many problems were left vague and undefined, for Bismarck wished to proceed with caution. Yet, since the greater always draws the less, the Federal Government was bound to extend its sphere of legislative control and absorb fresh departments of social and political administration, to the detriment of the several States. The States south of the Main, namely Bavaria, Würtemberg, Baden, and Hesse-Darmstadt, retained their independence, but they were afraid of being annexed by Napoleon, whose claim for compensation on the Rhine Bismarck had disclosed to them. Hence they were unable to stand alone, and formed an offensive and defensive alliance with Prussia, which thus obtained control over their military forces.

---

[1] *Infra*, Chapter V.

[2] After the entrance of the South German States into the Confederation, the number of members in the *Bundesrath* was increased to fifty-eight : A. L. Lowell, *The Governments of France, Italy, and Germany* (1914), p. 192.

(3) *France.*

(3) The war between Austria and Prussia was the first stage in the growth of the German Empire; the second stage was the war between Prussia and France. Here, again, it is necessary to distinguish between the underlying cause of the conflict and the occasion. The dispute over the Spanish succession was not the ultimate cause of the Franco-Prussian War, any more than the Schleswig-Holstein dispute was the ultimate cause of the Austro-Prussian War.

The Middle Kingdom.

It is one of the misfortunes of history that the idea of a Middle Kingdom, covering the debatable land between France and Germany, has never materialized. The empire of Charles the Great broke up after his death into three divisions: the western portion corresponding roughly to modern France, the eastern portion answering to modern Germany, and the middle portion—a straggling tract of territory, known as Lotharingia—extending across Europe and embracing Aachen, the capital of the Teutonic peoples, and Rome, the capital of the Latin peoples. Lotharingia failed, however, to survive as a 'buffer' State, and was soon absorbed by its neighbours. In the fifteenth century another attempt was made by Charles the Bold of Burgundy to build up a Middle Kingdom; and, if his efforts had achieved success, they would have diverted the whole current of European development. But his untimely death shattered his plans, and France and Germany were left to confront each other face to face. The momentous changes, which were transforming Prussia at this period into a great military

1866-70 — Power and the head of a United Germany, could not leave France indifferent, and the clash of conflicting interests provoked the war of 1870.

Napoleon III. and Prussia. The relations between France and Prussia had been unfriendly ever since Napoleon I. inflicted on the latter the crushing defeat of Jena (1806). Bismarck, however, was not influenced by traditional feuds, and what he called "stagnating antipathies"; and he had no scruple in utilizing with subtle craft any foreign Power, whose assistance at the moment might contribute directly or indirectly to the end which he so sedulously pursued. As early as 1857, he had advocated improved relations between Prussia and France; and from the moment of his accession to office five years later he had skilfully manipulated his intercourse with Napoleon, who was outwitted in diplomacy as successfully as he was afterwards outmatched in war. The French Emperor entirely misinterpreted the real drift of the political situation in Germany. His sympathies with the Italian movement led him to look upon Austria as the enemy of France, and he even courted an alliance with Prussia against the Habsburg monarchy. Overrating the military efficiency of the Austrian State, he was willing that Prussia should extend her influence in North Germany as a counterpoise to the power of her rival in the South. Of Bismarck's ulterior designs he was completely ignorant, and he only awoke to the perception of the Prussian menace when it was too late. He had formed vague notions of 'rectifying' the French frontier towards the Rhine, and he also wished to carve out for himself in Germany a position like that of Napoleon I., who had formed the lesser German States into a Confederation of the Rhine under French control. The aim of his policy was, therefore, to keep Germany weak and disunited, and to prevent either Austria or Prussia from obtaining the preponderance. Accordingly, upon the outbreak of the Austro-Prussian War he observed strict neutrality, but the victory of Sadowa speedily upset all his calculations. He had confidently expected that the struggle would be protracted, and that both sides would become exhausted, after which he would intervene as umpire and dictate terms. Yet even Sadowa did not completely dispel his illusions. He raised no protest against the expansion of the Prussian kingdom, for in some aggrandizement of Prussia in North Germany he saw not only no danger to France, but even a means against the unification and national development of Germany. He believed that the non-Prussian portions of Germany would then feel a greater need for French support.

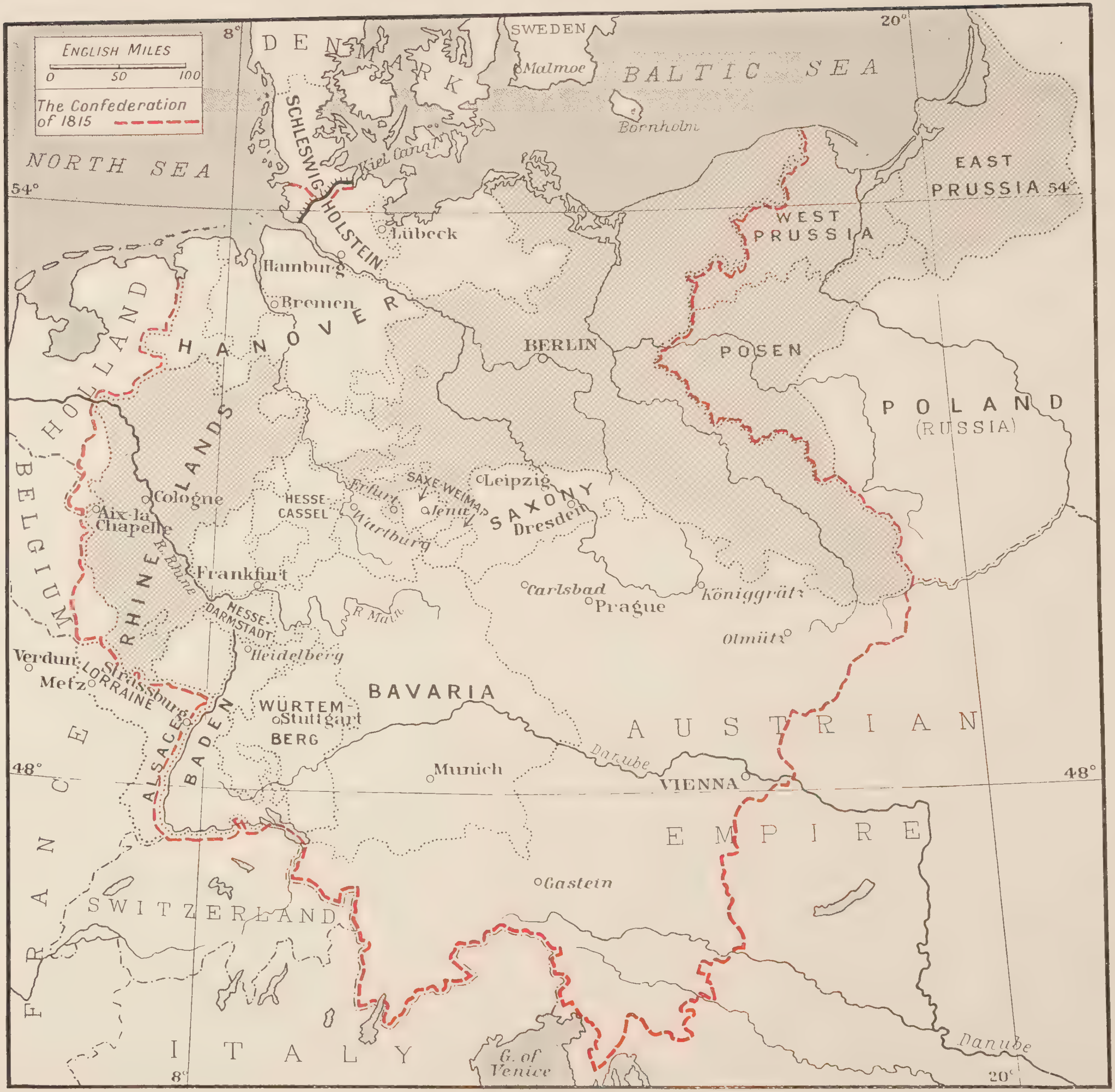
Causes of the Franco-Prussian War (1870).

On his part the Prussian statesman welcomed Napoleon's misconceptions, because he wished to postpone the outbreak of war until he had completed his military preparations, and was anxious not to embark upon the struggle with France precipitately. But while delaying the issue, his programme from the first was clearly mapped out in his mind. He was convinced that "a United Germany was only a question of time, that the North German Confederation was only the first step in its solution." He was equally persuaded that "a Franco-German war must take place before the construction of a United Germany could be realized."[1] "That a war with France would succeed that with Austria," he afterwards declared, "lay in the logic of history." He needed a war to complete the fabric of the German Empire for two main reasons. In the first place, he knew that France would strenuously resist all efforts to unite Germany under Prussian leadership; it was, indeed, owing to Napoleon's intervention after Sadowa that Bismarck had been compelled to proceed with caution and to moderate his demands upon Austria. In the second place, the reluctance of South German princes to enter the Confederation could only be overcome if the whole people of Germany were carried away by a fresh national impulse. "The German national feeling south of the Main, aroused by our military successes in 1866, and shown by the readiness of the southern States to enter the alliances, would grow cold again."[2] The gulf which dynastic influences and different habits of life had created in the course of history between the north and south of Germany could not be more effectually bridged over, so Bismarck supposed, "than by

[1] *Reflections*, ii. 57.

[2] *Ibid.* ii. 97.

1852-70 — unity of Italy. Both were confronted by the same foe: Austria was the obstacle to the expansion of Prussia no less than to the expansion of Piedmont. In each case consummate statecraft overcame apparently insuperable difficulties, and achieved surprising success. Here, however, the resemblance ends. The differences in the main were twofold. In the first place, Cavour was a Liberal and Bismarck was a reactionary. The former was the leader of the constitutional party in Piedmont, the cardinal tenet of his political faith being the belief in free institutions. Although he necessarily employed force to expel Austria from the Peninsula the unification of Italy was essentially a popular movement, and it was based upon a series of plebiscites. The people worked hand in hand with the monarchy for the attainment of their national aspirations. Bismarck, on the other hand, was a reactionary. He appears to have believed that force, rather than ideas, constitutes the basis of government, and he built up a strong military monarchy in Prussia upon the ruins of the parliamentary system. Thus the German Empire which he established rests upon the sword, and its foundations are a series of compacts between the different Governments. In short, it is a Federal State, and the future alone can determine the strength of the links which bind together its component parts. In the second place, Cavour was content to merge Piedmont in Italy, while Bismarck could never be brought to sink Prussian individuality in a German national State. We may express the difference by saying that Italy absorbed Piedmont, whereas Prussia has absorbed Germany. This is another element of weakness in the German political system. Prussia's predominance has developed a resentment which time may eradicate, but which, again, circumstances may accentuate. When Cavour died, his work was substantially complete; Bismarck has left behind him problems which necessarily involve us in uncertainty as to the destiny of the structure which he created. Future events alone can decide whether the spirit in which he worked, and the methods which he employed, did not give a wholly false direction to German political development.



GERMANY IN 1815

CHAPTER III

THE REFORM MOVEMENT IN RUSSIA

(1815–1916)

1815
—
The place of the nineteenth century in Russian history.

At the opening of the nineteenth century Russia was still a semi-Asiatic Power. The successive waves of Tartar hordes had left behind them a residuum of barbarism, which for centuries arrested the normal development of the Russian people. Peter the Great, who reigned from 1682 to 1725, was the first to take in hand the herculean task of raising Russia to the level of Western civilization; unfortunately he found no successor to carry on his work. Catharine the Great (1762–1796) enhanced the European status of her kingdom and made it a factor of the greatest weight in foreign politics, but she did not attempt to grapple with the really vital problems of internal reconstruction. In the nineteenth century itself one great achievement, the emancipation of the serfs, stands to the credit of Alexander II. In other respects, the interest of Russian history during this period lies in the gradual awakening of all the best elements in Russian society to the overwhelming need for the social and political regeneration of their country. The slow permeation of constitutional ideas has made the past century a seed-time, of which the harvest has yet to be reaped. Hence the keynote to Russian history is to be found in the incessant struggle between the forces of progress and reaction, and while the latter have repeatedly gained the upper hand, the subterranean workings of Liberalism have nevertheless undermined the whole fabric of bureaucratic absolutism. Russia, emerging slowly and painfully from her mediæval bondage, stands at the present day upon the

1815 — threshold of a new life; and, however much the tenacity of vested interests may retard the evolution of her people, the present struggle for national existence is bound to react favourably upon the internal situation.[1] A survey of the condition of Russia after 1815 will best enable us to grasp the complex nature of the problems with which she is to-day confronted.

Condition of Russia in 1815. (*a*) *Serfdom.*

Of these problems the most pressing in 1815 was the bondage of the Russian peasant. At the time of the Emancipation (1861), Russia contained nearly forty-nine and a half million serfs, of whom twenty-three millions belonged to the Crown and an equal number to private landlords, the rest being attached either to the Church and other institutions, or employed in domestic service.[2] The position of the peasants on the royal demesne was infinitely more tolerable than that of serfs held in private ownership. They were grouped together in village communities (*mir*) where they enjoyed a certain measure of local self-government, regulating their concerns through the village elder and an elected council. They suffered from various disabilities, restrictions being imposed on their movements, and on their right to acquire property and dispose of their belongings; but their main grievance was the heavy burden laid upon them in the shape of illegal taxes, the extortion of bribes, and the exaction of forced labour. The terrible condition of the serfs under private landlords, on the other hand, may be inferred from the statement of a Russian patriot, in 1826, that " the negroes on the American plantations were happier than the Russian private serfs." Their owners, being as a rule insolvent, were wont to sell their serfs like cattle, even separating members of one family, and exacting from those who remained extra dues and labour. The Russian law of serfage stated that " the proprietor may impose on his serfs every kind of labour, may take from them money dues, and demand from them personal service." He could also inflict corporal punishment, hand them over as conscripts to the military authorities, or transport them to Siberia.[1] An appalling picture is drawn by a recent historian: "The peasants of the smaller proprietors were subject to direct oppression at the hands of their masters; but those of the great nobles, who lived in St. Petersburg, suffered not less severely at the hands of their stewards and tenants. They perished by hundreds in the factories established, at this period, to augment the incomes of these great landed proprietors. They were also subjected to inhuman punishments, imprisoned in underground cellars, kept in chains, or flogged to death with the knout, by order of the master or his steward. A whole series of such crimes were brought to light . . . on the properties of the highest dignitaries of State—men who enjoyed in St. Petersburg the reputation of statesmen and even of philanthropists."[2] Catharine the Great, a princess of German origin, and the correspondent of Voltaire and the Encyclopædists, deprived the serfs of all legal rights, and ordered that those who ventured to seek redress against their masters should be punished with the knout and transported for life to the mines (1767).[3] It is worth while to contrast the humane precept regarding the English serf laid down by Bracton six hundred years before the Russian Edict of Emancipation. "Serfs," wrote the great English jurist, "have a personal right of action in court *against all persons* for injuries done to themselves."[4]

---

[1] " The triumph of the common cause of European democracy will at the same time be the triumph of our own " : G. Alexinsky, *Russia and the Great War* (1915), 357.

[2] A. Rambaud, *Histoire de la Russie* (ed. 1900), 677.

(b) Internal administration.

The internal administration of Russia at this period defies description: "Everything was corrupt, everything unjust, everything dishonest." How could it be otherwise? Every office in the State was open either to influence or to the highest bidder, without any regard to the competence of the candidate. Bribery, a vice usually inherent in all Eastern administrations, existed everywhere; it was rendered worse by the fact that practically all the officials throughout the Empire were paid inadequate salaries. The military governors of the provinces accumulated immense fortunes by fleecing the people, and their example was

---

[1] See D. M. Wallace, *Russia* (ed. 1912), c. xxviii.
[2] S. Askenazy, "Russia" in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* x. 426-7.
[3] Wallace, *op. cit.* 473.
[4] E. Lipson, *Economic History* (1915), i. 42.

1815 — zealously followed by their subordinates, each according to his degree. We have to turn to the Oration where Cicero depicts the condition of Sicily under the rule of Roman proconsuls, to find an adequate parallel to the state of affairs in Russia where the venality of the officials was a byword. The people found it useless to complain, since a change of governors effected no change in their situation. It was impossible to get justice in any civil court from the highest to the lowest, without bribery; and the malversation of public funds was a normal practice.

Discontent of Russian nobles.

The French Revolution broke out in France, not because the economic abuses were greater there than elsewhere in Europe, but owing to the growth of an enlightened middle class whose discontent with the existing regime had been fostered by the writings of the 'Philosophers.' In Russia, on the other hand, there was no middle class, saturated with Liberal ideas, to lead the revolt against the Government; and the peasants themselves were too cowed to furnish leaders from their midst. But in the years immediately following the Napoleonic wars their cause found champions in unexpected quarters. The nobility had their own grounds for dissatisfaction with the Government. The situation was parallel, in some respects, to that which prevailed in Prussia about the same period, for in both countries there was deep-rooted hostility between the nobles and the centralized bureaucracy. The former resented the preponderance of the official class in whose hands now lay the complete direction of State affairs, and in the case of the Russian nobles this ill-feeling was intensified by the fact that men of German birth were filling public posts. Hence, while professing outward loyalty to the monarchy, they were not disinclined to welcome attacks upon the existing order. Moreover the officers of the army, who were recruited from the ranks of the nobility, returned to Russia—after a protracted campaign in Western Europe—with a broader and more sympathetic outlook as the result of impressions gained during their three years' residence in France. Just as the American Revolution laid the foundations of the French Revolution, so the contrast between the degradation of Russia with her servile population and lack of free institutions on the one hand, and the condition of France on the other, planted the seeds of revolution in many Russian hearts. "The ideas of constitutional monarchy and ideas of revolution," wrote a distinguished Russian officer, Colonel Paul Pestel, in his Autobiography, "then began to spring up in me; as yet the latter were still weak and obscure, but gradually they became stronger and more distinct. . . . From ideas of constitutional monarchy I passed to republican ideas."[1] As the instrument of their ideas, and the vehicle of their propaganda, they formed secret societies, adopting a method of organization particularly prevalent at this time in Southern Europe, where the *Carbonari* in Italy, and the *Hetairia* in Greece, were almost the only channels of political activity. Tentative experiments resulted, in 1818, in a society known as the Union of Public Good, which after three years broke up into two separate bodies: the Society of the North and the Society of the South. The former drew its members from the army stationed at Petrograd, and its programme was that of constitutional monarchy. The latter was recruited from the army in the south, and favoured a republic. A third society, afterwards amalgamated with the Society of the South, was that of the United Slavs, which advocated a federation of all the Slavonic peoples. But the members of all these societies were, as a writer at the time observed, "a generation without fathers and sons," and they shared the fate of all pioneers who live in advance of their age. Drawing their inspiration from the freer atmosphere of Western life, and cherishing a generous passion for freedom, they were never more than a mere handful of patriots, isolated among contemporaries not yet ripe for their ideas. But while their failure was thus rendered inevitable, they left behind them memories of self-sacrifice, which will always give them a place in Russian history.

The Decembrist movement (1825).

The interregnum which followed the death of Alexander I. (1825) afforded the secret societies an opportunity to assert themselves. Alexander left three brothers, of whom Con-

---

[1] Cited in Lavisse et Rambaud, *Histoire Générale*, t. x. 147.

1825 stantine, the eldest and therefore next in succession, had been induced by the Emperor to renounce his claim in favour of a younger brother, Nicholas. His sacrifice involved the succession in some uncertainty, for it was doubtful whether his renunciation was really valid. The period of suspense lasted three weeks, after which Nicholas ascended the throne in Constantine's place; but meanwhile all the elements of disaffection had been gathering strength, and the secret societies seized the occasion for a revolutionary outbreak. On December 26 an insurrection broke out in Petrograd, where the Moscow regiment, at the instigation of its officers, refused to take the oath to the new Emperor. The rising speedily proved a complete fiasco; it was purely a military revolt, confined practically to a single regiment, and neither the official classes nor the people of the capital had any part in it. Moreover it was badly organized, and its leaders showed themselves unequal to the emergency. A mutiny provoked by the Southern Society was suppressed with even greater ease, and everywhere the embers of revolt were rigorously stamped out. A commission of investigation sat to inquire into the ramifications of the conspiracy, and men of the highest distinction "in letters, arts and political philosophy," and "the *élite*," as it was said, "of all that was civilized and truly noble in Russia," were condemned to exile in Siberia. Some even perished by an ignominious death; among them, Paul Pestel. "My error has been," he said on the scaffold, "that I tried to gather the harvest before I sowed the seed." "I knew beforehand," declared another patriot, "that our enterprise had no chance of success. I knew also that I must make a sacrifice of my life. . . . The harvest-hour will come later." The Decembrist movement, as it was called, thus came to an untimely end. The political inexperience of its authors threw away in one rash unorganized outburst the work of many years of preparation, and involved in fatal disaster the cause for which they had so long laboured. The programme they contemplated—equality before the law, the emancipation of serfs, a constitutional regime—deserved indeed a better fate. Yet their sacrifices were not made altogether in vain. The blood of martyrs waters the seeds of liberty, and the Decembrists had shown that the sufferings of the Russian people did not pass unheeded, but were capable of raising up patriots willing to pour out their blood for the regeneration of their country.

Nicholas I. (1825–1855).

The accession of Nicholas I., the incarnation of absolutism, inaugurated a new epoch. The catastrophe with which his reign opened moulded the character of his rule, and for thirty years he governed Russia with remorseless severity. Autocracy had triumphed over constitutional principles, and it spared no effort to entrench itself in an unassailable position. At a time when the countries of Western Europe were convulsed by the titanic conflict of Liberalism and Reaction, Russia presented to the world an appearance of absolute immobility. Abroad, Nicholas was the energetic champion of Autocracy and the relentless enemy of all progressive movements. In 1830 he was only prevented by the Polish insurrection from intervening in France on behalf of the exiled Bourbon King; in 1848 he came to the assistance of the Emperor of Austria, and was responsible for the collapse of the Hungarian revolution. At home he pursued a policy of resolute repression, adopting an attitude of rigid conservatism and controlling with iron rigour all popular manifestations. His fanatical system of government effectually blocked up every avenue to freedom of thought and action. The secret police, abolished by his more humane predecessor, was immediately revived (1826), and their infamous record as the *Third Section of the Tsar's Private Chancellory* fills one of the darkest pages in Russian history. The head of the Section, the Chief of Police, possessed unlimited powers of "arresting, imprisoning, deporting, and making away with anyone whom he pleased, without any restriction whatever." This terrible institution, it has been said, "rivalled, if it did not exceed, the horrors of the Spanish Inquisition." Like his prototype, Philip II. of Spain, Nicholas sought to protect his subjects as much as possible from contact with European influences and Western ideas, which might unsettle their political convictions and introduce the leaven of revolutionary thought among an unsophisti-

1825–55 cated people. Accordingly, restrictions were imposed on foreign travel; the youth of Russia were forbidden to study abroad; and foreign publications were not admitted into the Empire without first undergoing rigorous scrutiny from the censor. Even the attendance of students at Russian Universities was discouraged, and the teaching of philosophy was expunged from the University curriculum and confided to ecclesiastics; like mediæval scholasticism, it became once more a branch of theological study. To fetter the human mind, and to check the spread of unfavourable criticism of the Government, the censorship of the press was armed with extensive powers. "The utterance of an unguarded word, the possession of a forbidden book, might at any time lead to exile in a distant government, or in Siberia itself, practically without either trial or appeal." Thus reaction was the keynote of the Imperial administration; and throughout his reign Nicholas, never faltering in his ruthless repression of all the forces of progress and enlightenment, set his face resolutely against the irresistible stream of humanity.

Comparison of Nicholas I. and Philip II.

A comparison of Nicholas I. with Philip II. of Spain not only reveals striking resemblances, but enables us to grasp the fundamental defect of their methods of government. Nicholas, like Philip, was an anachronism in the generation in which he lived. He was the 'Don Quixote of Autocracy,' fanatically opposed to the spirit of his age, and fighting with unyielding tenacity for a worn-out ideal. Throughout Europe he was the indomitable foe of Democracy, just as the Spanish monarchy in the sixteenth century was the sworn enemy of the Reformation. Each employed similar instruments, the one the Inquisition, the other the Third Section; and they made their realms 'intellectual quarantines' in order to isolate them from the disintegrating influence of European thought. But the real strength of the monarchical structure in Russia, as in Spain, lay in the apathetic indifference and unquestioning loyalty of their subjects; and this was also the source of its weakness, for the structure was bound to crumble to pieces once the nation awakened to political consciousness. This awakening was delayed in Russia until 1855, when the Crimean

1855 — War had the same effects upon her people which the destruction of the Spanish Armada had upon Spain; shattering their faith in the existing regime and in their own invincibility. For nearly half a century Russia had cherished the memory of Napoleon's disastrous retreat from Moscow, and the Autocracy found in its military prestige abroad its best justification for the oppression it carried on at home. The campaign in the Crimea dispelled at one blow all the illusions which the Russian people had entertained since 1812. The abuses of the administration were laid bare before their eyes, and Russia now paid the penalty for the fatal incompetence of her bureaucracy. An English traveller in Russia, writing a few years after the conclusion of the Crimean War, has described its effects upon the educated classes in these words:

Russia and the Crimean War.

"In spite of the efforts of the Government to suppress all unpleasant intelligence, it soon became known that the military organization was little, if at all, better than the civil administration—that the individual bravery of soldiers and officers was neutralized by the incapacity of the generals, the venality of the officials, and the shameless peculation of the commissariat department. The Emperor, it was said, had drilled out of the officers all energy, individuality, and moral force. Almost the only men who showed judgment, decision, and energy, were the officers of the Black Sea fleet, which had been less subjected to the prevailing system. As the struggle went on, it became evident how weak the country really was—how deficient in the resources necessary to sustain a prolonged conflict. 'Another year of war,' writes an eye-witness in 1855, 'and the whole of Southern Russia will be ruined.' . . . Militia regiments were everywhere raised throughout the country, and many proprietors spent large sums in equipping volunteer corps; but very soon this enthusiasm cooled when it was found that the patriotic efforts enriched the jobbers without inflicting any serious injury on the enemy. Under the sting of the great national humiliation, the upper classes awoke from their optimistic resignation. They had borne patiently the oppression of a semi-military administration, and for

1855 — this! The system of Nicholas had been put to a crucial test, and found wanting. The policy which had sacrificed all to increase the military power of the Empire was seen to be a fatal error, and the worthlessness of the drill-sergeant regime was proved by bitter experience. Those administrative fetters which had for more than a quarter of a century cramped every spontaneous effort had failed to fulfil even the narrow purpose for which they had been forged. They had, indeed, secured a certain external tranquillity," but, "*this tranquillity was not that of healthy normal action, but of death*—and underneath the surface lay secret and rapidly-spreading corruption." In spite of the gallantry of the Russian soldier, "the result was now not victory, but defeat. How could this be explained except by the radical defects of that system which had been long practised with such inflexible perseverance? The Government had imagined that it could do everything by its own wisdom and energy, and in reality it had done nothing, or worse than nothing."[1]

Discontent of the educated classes.

After thirty years of stagnation and passive endurance the discontent of the educated classes began once again to rear its head. The censorship of the press acted as a restraint upon printed publications, but it could not prevent manuscript literature circulating from hand to hand. One specimen, which was widely circulated, has been printed by Sir Donald Mackenzie Wallace, and its keen satire on the administration of Nicholas reflects in vivid terms the profound change which was taking place in Russian public opinion.

Criticism of the Autocracy.

"'God has placed me over Russia,' said the Tsar to us, 'and you must bow down before me, for my throne is His altar. Trouble not yourselves with public affairs, for I think for you and watch over you every hour. My watchful eye detects internal evils and the machinations of foreign enemies; and I have no need of counsel, for God inspires me with wisdom. Be proud, therefore, of being my slaves, O Russians, and regard my will as your law.'

"We listened to these words with deep reverence, and

---

[1] Wallace, *Russia*, 444-5.

1855 gave a tacit consent; and what was the result? Under mountains of official papers real interests were forgotten. The letter of the law was observed, but negligence and crime were allowed to go unpunished. While grovelling in the dust before ministers . . . the officials stole unblushingly; and theft became so common that he who stole the most was the most respected. The merits of officers were decided at reviews; and he who obtained the rank of General was supposed capable of becoming at once an able governor, an excellent engineer, or a most wise senator. Those who were appointed governors were for the most part genuine satraps, the scourges of the provinces entrusted to their care. The other offices were filled up with as little attention to the merits of the candidates. A stable-boy became Press Censor! An Imperial fool became Admiral! . . .

"And what did we Russians do all this time?

"We Russians slept! With groans the peasant paid his yearly dues; with groans the proprietor mortgaged the second half of his estate; groaning, we all paid our heavy tribute to the officials. Occasionally, with a grave shaking of the head, we remarked in a whisper that it was a shame and a disgrace—that there was no justice in the courts—that millions were squandered on Imperial tours, kiosks, and pavilions—that everything was wrong; and then, with an easy conscience, we . . . squabbled with each other for advancement in the very service which we so severely condemned. . . . If any one, amidst the general lethargy, suddenly called upon us to rise and fight for the truth and for Russia, how ridiculous did he appear! . . . Under the anathema of public opinion, in some distant Siberian mine he recognized what a heinous sin it was to disturb the heavy sleep of apathetic slaves. . . .

"But amidst all this we had at least one consolation, one thing to be proud of—the might of Russia. . . . And lo! after all our boasting we were taken by surprise, and caught unawares. . . .

"Awake, O Russia! Devoured by foreign enemies, crushed by slavery, shamefully oppressed by stupid authorities and spies, awaken from your long sleep of ignorance and

1855 — apathy! . . . Stand forward calmly before the throne of the despot, and demand from him an account of the national disaster."[1]

Alexander II. (1855–1881). The reform period of Russian history set in with the accession of Alexander II., who came to the throne during the Crimean War (1855). The new Emperor was not, like his predecessor, 'a crowned drill-sergeant,' and the character of his administration was from the outset more humane and enlightened. Thus, at the moment when the blood of the Russian people was coursing more freely through their veins, their destinies were placed in the hands of one who was no reactionary, but recognized fully the fundamental need for constructive statesmanship. Alexander's preliminary measures seemed intended to pave the way for the complete reversion of his father's policy. The survivors of the Decembrist movement were allowed to return home after thirty years of exile, and other political offenders were also pardoned. At the same time the disabilities laid by Nicholas on the Universities, and the restrictions imposed upon foreign travel, were removed. These concessions were received by the Russian people with boundless enthusiasm. After the wintry rigour of the old regime, the mildness of the new reign gave promise of the dawn of spring. The wildest hopes were entertained, and men recked little of the rocks with which the path of progress is ever strewn. The censorship was relaxed, and the press flooded with Utopian schemes which an enlightened autocrat, imbued with the reforming spirit of eighteenth-century philosophy, was to carry into operation by the mere stroke of the pen. "We have to thank the war," it was said, "for opening our eyes to the dark sides of our political and social organization, and it is now our duty to profit by the lesson." A leading newspaper expressed the conviction that Russia would "accomplish peacefully and without effort not only those great reforms which cost Europe centuries of struggle and bloodshed, but also many which the nations of the West are still unable to accomplish, in consequence of feudal traditions and caste prejudices." It is worth while to

---

[1] Wallace, *op. cit.* 446-8.

Stanley's Press Agency.

ALEXANDER II

Emperor of Russia (1855-1881).

1856 —

observe that, at this period, the prevailing sentiment throughout Russia was apparently in no way anti-monarchical. On the contrary, the eyes of the nation were turned to the Tsar as the fountain-head from whom were to flow spontaneously all the benefits so eagerly anticipated. The Nihilist movement was as yet unborn; and there was a widespread and genuine belief that all classes of the community would co-operate loyally in social reforms, and vie with one another in a generous rivalry of self-sacrifice. Nor were these hopes entirely disappointed, for the new era was ushered in by an event second in importance only to the French Revolution.

The Emancipation of the serfs.

Alexander's most memorable achievement was the emancipation of the Russian peasant. All reformers were agreed that the abolition of serfdom was the indispensable starting-point of national regeneration. The existence of a large servile population, comprising nearly one half the nation, created an atmosphere which debased all sense of human dignity and stifled every generous instinct. It was, indeed, a fundamental cause of the inertia and stagnation of Russian life, alike in its moral, intellectual, and material aspects. Serfdom was also a menace to the security of the established order, and the danger of a slave war was always present to the mind of the Government, as in the ancient world it had been to the rulers of Rome. The peasants had never ceased to claim their freedom from the time when Peter III. (1762) released the nobility from the obligation to serve in the army. They held that their own emancipation ought to have followed as the corollary of Peter's action, since the only historical justification for their bondage lay in the services which the State in former days had exacted from their masters. The reign of Nicholas had witnessed a succession of revolts, which served to bring home to every section of society that the emancipation of the serfs was a measure no less demanded in the interests of self-preservation than in the name of humanity. Upon the conclusion of peace in 1856, Alexander immediately disclosed his intention to take the problem of serfdom in hand. "We live in such an age," he publicly warned the nobility, "that in time it

1861 — cannot but take place. In this, I think you too agree with me. Consequently, it is better for it to come from above than from below." The task of reconciling divergent interests and propitiating opposition made progress slow, but the Emperor was resolved to accomplish his purpose, and in 1861 the Edict of Emancipation abolished serfdom and liberated over forty millions of the Russian people at one stroke. The importance of this Edict in the history of Russia makes it necessary to give some account of its main principles, and to estimate the nature of its influence upon rural society. First of all, however, we must bear in mind that, while the disappearance of servitude in England was due to the gradual operation of economic forces, in Russia it was the result of conscious legislation. On this account it is more difficult to determine its effects, for legal activity generally achieves much less than we commonly suppose, and tends as a rule to leave the economic situation only slightly modified. There was unquestionably an immense gain to Russia from the moral standpoint, though even here it must be remembered that the Russian peasant, caring primarily about his material position, did not concern himself greatly about questions of status. But when we attempt to gauge the economic significance of the Emancipation the complexity of the problem forbids facile generalizations.

Effects of the Emancipation.

The Edict was based on three principles. In the first place it endowed the Russian serf with civil rights, conferring upon him the status of a free peasant, and releasing him from servile bondage to his master. In the second place it divided the ownership of the soil between the nobles and the peasants, in order to prevent the expropriation of the peasantry and the growth of a landless proletariat. Admiration of Western civilization did not blind Russian thinkers to its defects, and they recognized the danger of transplanting its institutions to Russia without guarding against their abuses. The condition of the serf who was liberated from legal bondage and allowed to sink into economic bondage as a homeless labourer would be not better, but far worse than before. While nominally free, he would be grounded down by the millstones of poverty, and become an easy prey to capitalist exploitation. It is very often assumed that the terms 'economic progress' and 'social welfare' express ideas which are necessarily complementary. But economic progress is sometimes achieved at the expense of social welfare, for the interests of a class are frequently at variance with those of society. The eighteenth century, for example, witnessed a great development in English agriculture, but it also saw the ruin of the English yeomanry. To make the Russian peasant like the English agricultural labourer would have secured to landed proprietors an abundant supply of cheap labour, and might have stimulated production, but its social effects would have been disastrous in the extreme. Hence the outstanding feature of the Emancipation was not primarily the removal of legal disqualifications, important though these were, but the transformation of the serf into a free peasant proprietor, owning as a shareholder in the village community the land that he occupied. This meant an invasion of 'the sacred rights of property,' and it is to the credit of the Russian nobles that they did not resist a measure which at one stroke deprived them both of compulsory labour and of a large portion of their estates. The quantity of land to be ceded by the proprietors was not fixed by law, but determined in each case by magistrates specially appointed to act as arbitrators between the serfs and the landowners. These magistrates, called Arbiters of the Peace, were themselves local proprietors, and to their impartiality and patience the success of the difficult task with which they were charged was largely due. Incidentally they showed that Russia contained men well fitted by their honourable conduct and loyal sense of duty to take part in the government of their country. In the redistribution of the soil, the prevailing idea was that the village community should retain as much land as it actually occupied at the time of the Emancipation. As compensation the landowner was to receive certain yearly payments, for which all the members of the rural commune shared the liability. The third principle embodied in the Edict of Emancipation

1861 — was that the Government should enable the village communities to redeem their annual dues by advancing to the proprietors a sum equivalent to their capitalized value, obtaining in return from the communes interest at six per cent. for a period covering forty-nine years. It must be observed that the ownership of the property ceded by the landowner was vested not in individual peasants—except in the West of Russia—but in the village community as a whole. In short, the control of the commune was substituted for the authority of the lord. Whatever the drawbacks of this system, it enabled the Government to impose the responsibility for the collection of redemption dues on the entire peasant body, and it also served as a precaution against the expropriation of individual peasants by wealthy landowners.

Criticism of the Edict.

The sweeping character of these changes in the legal condition of the Russian peasantry may easily lead us to misinterpret their immediate social and economic importance. On the surface it appeared as though the structure of rural society had been completely revolutionized; the old landmarks had been obliterated; the old relationships had been destroyed. In reality the position of the peasants was not radically improved; even to this day, indeed, it is very unsatisfactory. The terms of their emancipation, so far from awakening their enthusiasm, provoked profound discontent. They found themselves burdened with new taxes—often in excess of the normal rent of their land—which were not only a heavy drain upon their exiguous resources, but were also considered a grave injustice. They had always looked upon the land they occupied as their own, and historically their view seems well founded. Of course they had to work on their lord's estate; and no doubt lawyers represented their labour in the light of a rent, which proved that the serf was always a tenant, and never an owner. But this obligation, as we have seen, was actually a relic of the time when the State had exacted services from nobles and peasants alike. Hence the peasants expected their emancipation from compulsory labour to take place without the substitution of other burdens, the nobles having no claim to compensation beyond the release already granted to them from compulsory military service. Whether we admit the justice of this contention or not, it is at any rate incontestable that the pressure of land dues, often more irksome than the old labour dues, has been a primary cause in retarding their economic development. The abolition of serfdom, in spite of its important legal consequences, failed to achieve adequate amelioration in the lot of the Russian peasant. As he himself expressed it, his new situation was "both better and worse": he was relieved of certain disabilities, but in one form or another he was also burdened with fresh anxieties and obligations. The effects of the Emancipation upon the land-owning classes varied in different parts of the country, but one result everywhere was to compel them to put their houses in order, adopt more economical practices, and give more serious attention to the administration of their estates. "Formerly we kept no accounts and drank champagne," said one of the nobles; "now we keep accounts and content ourselves with beer."[1]

1864
—

Reforms in the law courts and local government.

The reign of Alexander II. was also distinguished for reforms in the law courts and in local administration. A commission appointed to examine the judicial system found that it contained no less than twenty-five radical defects, and it was therefore replaced by new institutions modelled on Western ideas. The principles of English and French jurisprudence were introduced (1864), namely, the separation of judicial and administrative powers, independence of the magistrates, oral procedure, and trial by jury. Justices of the Peace, chosen by popular election, were instituted to deal with minor cases, and an appeal could be made from the decisions of individual magistrates to the Monthly Sessions, corresponding to our own Quarter Sessions, and comprising all the Justices of the district. More important matters were reserved for the Regular Tribunals, composed of trained judges appointed by the Crown; here also appeals could be carried from the Ordinary Courts to the Courts of Appeal. At the same time Alexander instituted a system

---

[1] Wallace, *op. cit.* 520.

1864 — of local self-government in the central provinces of the Empire, based upon the principle of decentralization and provincial autonomy. There already existed in Russia various local bodies: (1) the assemblies of the nobility with the right to lay grievances before the Government; and (2) the assemblies of the peasants, the *mir* or village community, and the *volost* or canton. The new councils now brought together representatives of all three classes of the community, the nobles, the peasants, and the burghers. The District Council was appointed by popular election, and the Provincial Council, or *Zemstvo*, was elected by the District Councils. Their functions were to elect the Justices of the Peace, repair roads and bridges, supervise primary education and sanitation, and take measures against famine; but their activities were restricted owing to the power of the Governor of the province to veto their decisions, and by the lack of adequate financial resources. In all these directions—the abolition of serfdom, the reform of the judicature, and the introduction of a limited measure of local self-government—the early years of Alexander's reign marked an epoch in the assimilation of Russian life to the conditions of Western Europe.

Reaction. It was the irony of fate that, in spite of his great achievements, Alexander was destined to witness in his own lifetime the birth of revolutionary Nihilism. There is a remarkable contrast between the enthusiasm displayed at the beginning of his reign, and the gloom which clouded its end. After ten years of agrarian, judicial, and administrative reforms, the Government plunged once more into reaction, and many of the excesses which had disfigured the administration of Nicholas I. began to reappear. This alternation of expectation and disappointment unsettled the *moral* of the educated classes, destroying their faith in Autocracy, and driving them headlong into the arms of violent extremists. The causes of this revolution in public sentiment will serve to explain the origin of the Nihilist movement. The conviction steadily grew that reform must come from below, that the Government would only act under the stimulus of outside pressure and unceasing agitation.

1864 — *Its causes.*

In the first place, Alexander's reforms appeared more imposing on paper than when put to the test of actual practice. The peasantry discovered that emancipation meant new burdens for old, and the improvement in their legal status effected little change in their economic situation, and no change at all in their moral principles. Russian thinkers had confidently predicted that the abolition of servitude would forthwith create a freer atmosphere and a vigorous and enterprising peasantry, forgetting that centuries of oppression cannot be wiped out by a single and belated act of justice. The judicial and administrative reforms admittedly laid the foundations of a better system of government, but here again the benefits so eagerly anticipated were deferred; for the success of an institution depends primarily upon the men who work it, and Russia lacked trained jurists and competent administrators. On psychological grounds also, it is possible to explain why public opinion veered completely round from a state bordering on exaltation to a state of the most profound depression. For a generation the normal development of the Russian people had been arrested by the iron will of Nicholas I.; the moment his hand was withdrawn from the helm of the State, the nation by an irresistible effort burst asunder the bonds which had cramped its energies and fettered its activities. In the first flush of unbounded optimism the wildest hopes of a new heaven and a new earth were entertained, and the regeneration of the whole Russian Empire seemed at hand. But when the reforms of Alexander II. failed to accomplish the striking results so eagerly looked for, there followed a complete revulsion of feeling. The pendulum swung from one extreme to the other, and despair—no less irrational than the extravagant enthusiasm which preceded it—became the prevailing sentiment of Russian society. The ultimate reason, however, for the growth of a reactionary spirit in the later years of Alexander's reign is to be found in the character of the Emperor himself. He had no instinctive faith in the virtues of Liberal institutions, and his reforms were conceived not in the spirit of an idealist, but from the conviction that where change was inevitable

Character of Alexander II.

1865 — it ought to proceed from above rather than from below. His consciousness of great responsibilities made him cautious and distrustful of his own judgment. He had not the large creative mind and breadth of statesmanship necessary for the solution of the problems which he was called upon to handle. He was forced to rely upon his councillors, and here his vacillation and want of resolution laid him open to conflicting influences. He was surrounded by advisers trained in the school of Nicholas, and impregnated with his reactionary doctrines. Though compelled for a time to refrain from open manifestation of their opinions, these men gradually acquired a predominant hold over the Emperor's mind. After 1864 the reforming zeal of Alexander rapidly cooled, partly on account of the Polish insurrection, and partly from the fear that further concessions would weaken the Autocracy. He had attempted to satisfy the nation with half-measures, the serfs with an emancipation only semi-complete, the nobles with the grant of provincial liberties. Yet it was abundantly clear that no real progress could be achieved while the Imperial administration was divorced from all popular control. The burden of Empire was too great for one man's shoulders, and responsible government alone could remedy the maladies with which Russian society was afflicted. The nobles had expected their own political emancipation to follow the legal emancipation of their serfs, as logically it should have done. They were entitled to a share in political power as the reward for the sacrifices they had been required to make. In 1865 the Moscow nobles petitioned the Emperor to establish representative institutions, in order, they said, that truth may "reach your throne without hindrance." But this demand for a Constitution was always strenuously resisted by the Emperor to the end of his days. Thus all classes of the community were disillusioned, and from their dissatisfaction with the existing state of affairs sprang the Nihilist movement.

Nihilism. The term 'Nihilist,' as applied to Russian revolutionists, was first introduced by Turgenev in his novel, *Fathers and Sons.*[1] Its principal character, Bazarov, was intended to

---

[1] Translated by C. Garnett.

1860–70 — portray a new type then coming into prominence among the younger generation of the 'sixties. He is represented as one " who does not bow down before any authority, who does not take any principle on faith, whatever reverence that principle may be enshrined in"; who refuses "to talk nonsense about art, parliamentarism, trial by jury . . . while, all the time, it is a question of getting bread to eat"; and who is convinced that there is no "single institution in our present mode of life, in family or in social life, which does not call for complete and unqualified destruction." Bazarov is often supposed to embody " the spirit of absolute negation and of barren criticism"; and, when he is told that it is necessary to build up as well as to pull down, he replies: "That's not our business now. . . . The ground wants clearing first." Turgenev's analysis, whatever its limitations, served to concentrate attention upon one fundamental feature of Nihilism as a philosophical system. This was its complete divorce from all regard for sentiment or tradition, the fetish of which clogged the wheels of progress and enslaved the mind of the human race. It is therefore the antithesis of Burke's philosophy, involving as it did an uncompromising breach with the past, and the reconstruction of society on a *tabula rasa*. The Nihilist cast away from him all that his contemporaries accepted on faith and treated as sacred, making scientific reasoning his starting-point, and discarding the worn-out truths of the 'Fathers.' Thus Nihilism revealed itself primarily as a force of destruction, but the programme sketched in Chernuishevsky's novel, *What is to be Done?*, showed that the movement had also a positive side.

(1) The first phase of Nihilism: philosophical.

In its first phase Nihilism was thus mainly a philosophy of negation, whose purpose was to break down the barriers erected by superstition and the worship of authority. In this respect it was a development of eighteenth-century philosophy, but with the important difference that it was based on science. The author of *Underground Russia*, known under the name of Stepniak, and himself a Nihilist, described it as " a struggle for the emancipation of intelligence from every kind of dependence. . . . The fundamental

1871–75 principle of Nihilism, properly so called, was absolute individualism. It was the negation, in the name of individual liberty, of all the obligations imposed upon the individual by society, by family life and by religion . . . a reaction against the moral despotism that weighs upon the private and inner life of the individual." The love of the beautiful, Art itself, was renounced, since it was not inspired by pure reason. "A shoemaker is superior to Raphael," it was said, "because the former makes useful things, while the latter makes things that are of no use at all."[1] In one direction, at any rate, Nihilism bore practical fruit by achieving the emancipation of women and establishing their right of free access both to higher education and the professions.

(2) The second phase: The propagandist movement.

After a few years (1860–1870), Nihilism ceased to be a philosophical and literary movement, and developed into a revolutionary and militant movement. It entered upon this new phase about 1871. An attempt to assassinate the Emperor Alexander in 1866 threw him into the arms of the reactionaries, and the Government in an outburst of hysteria indulged in all the excesses of a 'White Terror.' Its severity sowed the seeds of revolution, yet the inspiration which gave the impulse to a revolutionary movement came from abroad. The passion for individual freedom was merged, as the result of foreign influences, into the greater passion for social and political freedom. The example of the Parisian Commune,[2] which had endeavoured to establish a social democracy, crystallized in definite form the vague aspirations of Russian educated thought. It inflamed the minds of those who pitied the wretched condition of the Russian peasant, burdened with taxes often in excess of the income of his land, and "exhausted," as they said, "by hunger, broken down by toil, the eternal slave of the privileged classes, working without pause, without hope of redemption." Another influence moulding Russian political thought was the 'Internationale,' a Socialist society, whose headquarters at Zurich attracted great numbers of men

[1] Stepniak, *Underground Russia* (Eng. trans. 1883), 4, 8.

[2] *Infra*, Chapter VIII.

1871–75 —

and women from all parts of Russia. Ordered by the Imperial Government in 1873 to leave Zurich, they returned home to spread among their countrymen the new gospel of the emancipation of the proletariat. Out of the ferment of political ideas, two main currents of opinion emerged: Socialism and Anarchism. The Socialists were represented by Lavroff, whose programme was peaceful propaganda among the peasants—in short, the education of the masses. Like the disciples of Mazzini,[1] the Socialists were to go 'among the people' and share their life, but the ideas they were to impart to them were to be those of social and economic freedom, not of nationality. The Anarchists, on the other hand, followed the lead of Bakunin, 'the genius of destruction,' whose policy was to rouse the peasantry to an immediate revolution. At first the more moderate counsels of the Socialist party prevailed, and the young men and women of Russia prepared to devote their lives to the people from whom they were sprung. This movement for the peaceful dissemination of Socialist ideas covered chiefly the years 1872–75, but from the outset it was carried on with the greatest difficulty. In Petrograd Prince Kropotkin lectured secretly among the workmen of the suburbs, while others settled in villages or worked in factories. It was impossible, however, to keep the propaganda secret from the police, and the agitators were arrested in great numbers and brought to trial. Even when they were acquitted, they were interned in a northern province, and from 1863 to 1874—on one pretext or another—nearly 150,000 persons were deported to Siberia.

(3) *The third phase: Revolutionary Nihilism.*

This collapse of the propagandist movement wrought great depression in the ranks of the revolutionists. A whole generation of eager enthusiasts had been 'mown down,' and the scanty successes achieved seemed paltry by the side of the immense sacrifices they had entailed. In these circumstances Nihilism entered upon its third and best-known stage, that of political terrorism. "The propagandist movement," it was said, "was a sublime test of the power of Words. By a natural reaction the opposite course

---

[1] *Infra*, p. 167.

1876-78 was now to be tried, that of Acts. . . . The cry of 'Let us act' became as general as that of 'among the people' had been a few years before."[1] Force was to be met by force, and peaceful agitation, which seemed powerless to effect an improvement, was succeeded by armed resistance. The next three years (1876–1878) witnessed a number of 'demonstrations,' or street insurrections. But repeated failure drove home the lesson that revolutions like those in Paris were impossible in Russia, where nine-tenths of the population were dispersed over the country-side. The control of the army enabled the Government to suppress with ease all popular outbreaks, and after 1878 their futility was recognized even by the revolutionary party itself. Meanwhile, the relentless severity of the administration was deepening in the hearts of the revolutionists their feelings of bitter hatred and personal resentment. Political cases were tried in special courts, and the harshest sentences were inflicted for insignificant offences. Students were excluded from the Universities, and thereby debarred from the higher public appointments. The District Councils (*Zemstvos*) and the law courts were placed under more stringent control. The works of Mill, Spencer, and Lecky were not allowed to enter Russia, and cases affecting the press were tried without a jury. All the abuses of the old regime reappeared, and bribery and corruption were once more rife. In a word, the Government—now completely out of touch with public opinion—found itself in open conflict with the Russian *Intelligence*. The ruling caste became more and more reactionary, the educated classes more and more revolutionary, and there were no moderating influences in the country to hold the balance between the extremists on both sides. As the result of repression, the Nihilist ceased to be a propagandist, and became 'the type of individual force.' Abandoning pacific methods, Nihilism developed into a vast secret conspiracy which no longer leaned upon popular support, but employed the deadly weapon of assassination. Nihilists justified the use of a weapon so repugnant to Western ideas, on the ground that "an insurrection in the European manner was absolutely impossible," and that everything was permitted against a system of government based on "organized injustice," and "entrenched behind a forest of bayonets."[1] Deeds of violence were at first spasmodic and directed chiefly against spies. The impulse to an organized system of Terrorism came from the act of a woman, Vera Zassulic, who fired a revolver shot at General Trepoff (February 1878), in order to avenge a political prisoner flogged in defiance of the law. She was acquitted by the jury; and, when the police attempted to rearrest her, she was rescued by the crowd and escaped over the frontier. This event created a profound sensation throughout Europe and brought on a crisis which lasted three years, culminating finally in the assassination of the Emperor. Alexander appealed to public opinion, but the *Zemstvos* replied that "the struggle with destructive ideas would be possible only if the public possessed its own weapons—freedom of speech and of the press, of opinion and of instruction." This was the only real remedy, but neither Alexander II. nor his immediate successor was willing to share his power with the nation.

---

[1] Stepniak, *op. cit.* 33.

1878–81
—

The Terrorism.

The control of the revolutionary movement was now in the hands of a society known as 'Land and Liberty,' which had branches in different parts of Russia. But the old differences which had divided Russian revolutionists still survived; one section—the 'Black Partition'—consisted of social democrats whose methods were pacific; while the other section—the 'Will of the People'—relied upon force. A few months after the acquittal of Zassulic, the head of the secret police (the Third Section) was 'put to death' in broad daylight in the streets of Petrograd, his assailant escaping arrest. Four attempts were made upon the life of Alexander II. After the first attempt Russia was divided into six military governments, each under the control of a governor-general armed with absolute powers of life or death. Yet the only result of the proclamation of martial law was to stimulate the revolutionists to renewed activity. Though the Nihilists were but few in number,

Assassination of Alexander II. (1881).

---

[1] Stepniak, *op. cit.* 41, 271.

1881 their energy, fearlessness, and devotion to their cause, made them extremely formidable. The real secret of their success, however, lay in the complete isolation of the Russian Government, which had alienated society by withholding from it the most elementary political rights—liberty of speech and liberty of the press, national representation, and, above all, freedom from arbitrary arrest and deportation. Public opinion, while it could not endorse acts of violence, sympathized with the objects of the revolutionary programme, and funds for Nihilist purposes were secretly supported by all classes. After the third attempt, an explosion in the Winter Palace, new tactics were adopted. Coercion having failed to stamp out Nihilism, Alexander attempted to disarm it by a policy of conciliation. Loris-Melikoff was invested with the powers of a dictator, and his first measures skilfully created the illusion that serious reforms were about to be taken in hand. This pacified the public mind, and even the revolutionists momentarily suspended their campaign. The illusion did not last long. It was soon discovered that Loris-Melikoff had no intention of effecting really radical changes in the system of government. Nevertheless, he managed to obtain the Emperor's assent to the institution of a General Commission, a semi-representative body, containing a number of delegates elected by the *Zemstvos* and the chief towns. Whether this very moderate concession would have met with approval is doubtful, for the functions of the new Commission were to be purely consultative. But the scheme never received a trial, for on the very day Alexander yielded his consent he was killed by a bomb (1881). The Revolutionary party at once published a manifesto offering to refrain from further acts of violence on condition of (1) a national assembly elected on the basis of manhood suffrage, and (2) freedom of the press, freedom of speech, and the right of public meeting: "the only means," it declared, "by which Russia can enter upon the path of peaceful and regular development."[1]

The reign of Alexander's successor, as the French historian, Rambaud, pointed out at the time, opened under gloomy auspices, for it began with the first public execution of a woman for over half a century. From the outset Alexander III. pursued a policy of avowed reaction. He revived the arbitrary traditions of Nicholas I., whom in many respects he closely resembled. The keynote of his policy was sounded in an imperial manifesto issued upon his accession to the throne. "The Voice of God," it announced, "orders us to stand firm at the helm of government . . . with faith in the strength and truth of the autocratic power, which we are called to strengthen and preserve, for the good of the people, from every kind of encroachment." Melikoff's project of a General Commission was still-born; and the Government proceeded on every side to conduct a relentless campaign against Russian educated thought. Behind the throne now ranged the sinister figure of the Procurator of the Holy Synod, Pobêdonostev, the evil genius of Russia. Pobêdonostev exercised great influence over the minds of Alexander III. and Nicholas II., whose education had been entrusted to his hands. In the confession of political faith which he has left on record, he condemned all Western institutions root and branch, and even attempted to give a philosophical basis to reaction. He pronounced Constitutional Government to be "the great political lie which dominates our age," and defined Parliament as merely "an institution serving for the satisfaction of the personal ambition, vanity, and self-interest of its members." It was, indeed, "one of the greatest illustrations of human delusion," while Democracy was "the most complicated and the most burdensome system of government recorded in the history of humanity."[1] No one who has had experience of the working of Western institutions will be tempted to pronounce them ideal; but, however much they may fall short of perfection, they at any rate ensure the sanctity of law and the ordered liberty that springs from law. It is by its fruits that an institution should be judged, and the fruits of Pobêdonostev's system were not likely to recommend themselves to Russian public opinion. The

---

[1] The manifesto is printed in the Appendix to Stepniak, pp. 287-94.

1881–94
—
Alexander III. (1881–1894).

---

[1] Pobêdonostev, *Reflections* (Eng. trans. 1898), 34, 35, 43, 45.

1886–89 — press was subjected to the most rigorous treatment, many newspapers being suppressed outright or indirectly compelled to suspend publication.[1] The Universities, which were equally obnoxious to the authorities, were not only denied the right to administer independently their own internal affairs, but restrictions were also placed on the admission of students and their right of association. This control over education extended to all the primary and secondary schools, and many schoolmasters were expelled from their positions. Most disastrous of all was the treatment meted out to the law courts and the *Zemstvos*, for this struck at the very root of Alexander II.'s most vital reforms.

The Land Captains.

We endeavoured to show above how the Emancipation of the Serfs—the greatest landmark in the history of Russia during the nineteenth century—was more beneficial on its legal side than on its economic. We saw, for example, how the peasants were burdened with such heavy taxation that "for the majority of the Russian peasantry the primary object in life is to earn enough to pay the taxes."[2] But with all its drawbacks the Edict of Emancipation achieved one invaluable result—it liberated the peasant from the rule of the squirearchy; it shattered the feudal authority of the local land-owners. An attempt was now made to reverse the whole course of historical development from slavery to freedom; to re-establish a kind of 'bastard feudalism'; to degrade the peasant once more to a condition of legal servitude. This was done by placing the rural population under a system of police discipline, administered by the landed proprietors over the labourers on their estates and the peasant owners in their neighbourhood. The first step in this direction was taken in 1886, when a breach of contract by a hired labourer was made a criminal offence. Three years later a fundamental change was made in the law courts, the class of elected magistrates (Justices of the Peace) being replaced by nominated officials known as

---

[1] *E.g.* by not being allowed to publish advertisements or to be sold in the streets.

[2] P. Vinogradoff in *Lectures on the History of the Nineteenth Century* (1902), 259.

1889 — Land Captains. The new institution was marked by the grossest defects. The Justices of the Peace had been elected by the *Zemstvo*, and they had shown themselves competent for their work. The Land Captains were chosen by the Governor of the province from among the local squires, and so served as the instruments of the central power. In addition they were vested both with judicial and administrative functions, in defiance of the wholesome principle that the administrator should not be the judge of his own actions. As judges, indeed, the new officials, who usually had no legal training and were ignorant even of legal processes, proved hopelessly inferior to the Justices of the Peace; and the 'reign of law,' inaugurated by Alexander's reforms, came to an abrupt end. As administrative officials the Land Captains possessed the most arbitrary powers. They practically wielded a dictatorship, and as 'nurses to the peasantry' they exercised the widest control over everything which concerned the peasants—the disposal of property, the election of communal officers, sanitary measures, relief of the poor. Their almost unlimited authority was backed by the right to imprison without trial. "We have no more judges," said a peasant, "we have commanding officers." "There is no indignity," observed a Russian magistrate, "which in the beginning of the twentieth century may not be inflicted on a Russian peasant." No class of officials was more hated than the Land Captains, because of the manner in which they abused their authority. "In what spirit justice and police are wielded by the Land Captains," wrote Professor Vinogradoff, "may be gathered from a few facts. During the terrible famine of 1892 the Land Captains of some districts of the province of Nijniy opposed systematically the policy of relief and restricted the delivery of bread although the population was literally starving, because they wanted to keep the people at low wages."[1]

The Zemstvos. In another direction also we can trace an immense set-back to the reform movement in Russia from 1881 to 1904. Few institutions of Russian society during the

---

[1] Vinogradoff, *op. cit.* 265.

1881–1904 second half of the nineteenth century merit more careful attention than the *Zemstvos*, or elected local government boards, which not only carried on a great work of social reconstruction, but gave to Russians an invaluable training in the art of self-government. Even the Revolutionary party, which sought more expeditious methods of achieving its ends, bore ungrudging testimony to their work. "Nobody can deny," wrote Stepniak, "that they have shown a praiseworthy activity," and have "laboured with all zeal and devotion for the good of the people, and not for the benefit of the class to which the majority of them belonged. . . . The measures they adopted proved them to be possessed of sound sense and practical views. This they showed by taking so much to heart, and at once, the question which is above all others and on which everything else depends—popular instruction, whereby alone the masses can be rendered capable of judging and acting for themselves."[1] There were practically no primary schools in Russia until the *Zemstvos* took the matter in hand, and they also effected great improvements in the medical and sanitary arrangements. In this work the *Zemstvo* of the province of Moscow enjoyed an honourable pre-eminence, and its creditable record illustrates the nature of the activities upon which the *Zemstvos* in general were engaged. It "brought the school within two miles of every inhabitant of the province of Moscow, and the hospital within five. Particularly admirable were the equipping of small medical outposts and the beginnings of adequate provision for the insane. Clover was supplied to the peasants, and there was a notable improvement in the cattle. Veterinary doctors were established, and imported cattle were inspected. Factories were compelled to drain their premises. The *Zemstvo* engaged to find water for villages. One thousand miles of road were constructed. Great pains were taken to create village libraries. In all these departments, each of which was committed to one man, the *Zemstvo* worked without pay, and was always ready to raise the rating rather than defer improvements. . . . The Moscow *Zemstvo* changed

---

[1] S. Stepniak, *Russia under the Tzars* (1885), ii. 169.

1881–1904

the face of the province."[1] But the admirable work accomplished by the *Zemstvos*, so far from disarming the suspicions of the Government, served only to intensify the hostility of the central bureaucracy. Admission to the *Zemstvos* was carefully regulated with a view to excluding the more progressive elements in the local communities, and in 1900 the *Zemstvos* were forbidden to raise their annual budget by more than three per cent.—an arbitrary limit expressly designed to curtail the scope of their beneficial activities. Moreover, as a Russian Liberal has pointed out, " the intentions of the reactionary party are even more worth notice than its particular achievements. The real enemy is always the same—law, a law independent of caprice and protection, proudly holding up its head in the face of the powers that be, appealing to the sense of dignity in man, and proclaiming the equality of citizens. . . . A Government which has created the Land Captains, and deprived millions of its Jewish subjects of the most common rights of citizens, even of the right of educating their children, such a Government is not a fitting patron of law and justice. What it enforces is obedience to order, not to law, and its contempt of law is exemplified in every way."[2]

***Nicholas II.* (1894–).**

Throughout the reign of Alexander III. (1881–1894) this reactionary system of government held its ground successfully. Completely isolated from his subjects, refusing personal contact even with his ministers, the Tsar shut himself up in his retreat, " surrounded by sentries, shadowed by secret police," enduring for thirteen years " the terrible strain of prolonged warfare against unseen and desperate foes."[3] Nor did the accession of Nicholas II. effect any change in the political situation. He created intense disappointment among the educated classes by characterizing as " senseless dreams " the ardent desire of the nation to be admitted to a share in legislation. " Devoting all my efforts to the prosperity of the nation," he announced, " I will preserve the principles of Autocracy as firmly and

---

[1] B. Pares, chapter on " Russia " in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* xii. 327.

[2] Vinogradoff, *op. cit.* 266.

[3] J. H. Rose, *The Development of the European Nations* (ed. 1915), 302.

1894–1904 unswervingly as my late father." None the less his reign was destined to witness the first great breach in the Autocratic Power, namely, the institution of an Imperial Parliament. We have now to trace the course of events which produced so epoch-making a change in the Government of Russia.

Decline of Nihilism. The Reform Movement in Russia, as we have seen, passed during the nineteenth century through several phases. Under the name of Nihilism, it began in the 'sixties as a philosophical protest against superstition and the reverence for authority; it then assumed a more practical bearing and sought to awaken the Russian peasant to the degradation of his economic position; finally it developed into a system of organized Terrorism. The assassination of Alexander II. marked the climax of the Nihilist movement; up to this point it had possessed the sympathy of the educated classes, which approved its aims, even if they could not sanction its methods. But the death of the 'Liberator' seems to have caused a certain revulsion of feeling, and the Terrorist movement imperceptibly lost its hold over most sections of the Russian community. The leading Terrorists were remorselessly tracked down and made to pay the death penalty; and all efforts to revive the Terrorist organization met with failure. It became evident to all that the Russian problem could not be solved by acts of Terrorism, that a small band of men and women, however heroic and determined, were powerless to overthrow a Government commanding practically unlimited resources. In 1892 Stepniak confessed that the revolutionists alone could not destroy the Autocracy; so uneven a struggle, he said, was merely an "exercise in the art of self-sacrifice." The Russian peasant, sunk in apathetic ignorance, and characterized by an almost superstitious reverence for the Tsardom, was profoundly distrustful of his would-be liberators and listened to their solicitations with stolid indifference, if not with open hostility. The revolutionists learnt what Napoleon had discovered three-quarters of a century earlier, that the Russian peasantry was not ripe for political propaganda. In short, the reform movement failed in the nineteenth century because it had only leaders and no followers; it had failed altogether to strike root among the masses. Hence, if Russia had continued in the agricultural stage, the Autocracy would have remained unassailable; but just as the Industrial Revolution in England shifted the centre of political gravity in 1832 from the landed to the mercantile classes, so a parallel movement in Russia profoundly modified the existing political situation. The unprecedented growth of industry during the closing years of the nineteenth century showed that Russia had become definitely committed, for good or evil, to the capitalist system. This rapid development was brought about by three different factors working in combination. The emancipation of the serfs made available an abundant supply of cheap labour; the creation of railways opened up means of communication, and increased the facilities of transport; and the influx of capital from abroad furnished the necessary basis for large industrial undertakings. The result was stupendous; an immense stimulus was given to the cotton and mineral industries, and the factory system grew by leaps and bounds. At the present day, indeed, Russia contains over three million factory workers, without taking into account the minor industries; and among the industrial nations of the world she is said to rank fifth. The period of transition is associated with the ministry of M. Witte (1892–1903), who encouraged the economic penetration of Russia by foreign capitalists as the only way of developing her natural resources.

The Industrial Revolution.

The advent of industrialism in Russia is an event which ranks in importance second only to the Emancipation of the Serfs. We are concerned here with its political significance alone, and the bare recapitulation of statistics would fail to bring home to us the potentialities latent in the great economic change now passing over Russia. One invariable result of the capitalist system is the creation of an industrial proletariat, and the artisan is always more intelligent and less conservative in his instincts than the rural labourer. In the ancient world the transition from monarchy to republicanism was due to the growth of cities, for town life fosters self-reliance, initiative, and love of change. In the country State of the modern world, with its looser political cohesion, the factory system has done away with the isolation of the worker ; it has brought great masses of men together under one roof, and so made possible concerted action among them. At the same time it has given them a consciousness of economic power, for while the individual is at the mercy of his employer, a well-organized union can often dictate its own terms. Now everything conspired to awaken in the Russian workman that discontent with his economic position, which is the usual source of political enlightenment. He suffered from long hours, low wages, brutal foremen, and a system of fines shamefully exorbitant. The Moscow employers blocked the path of factory reform on the ground of what they called "the freedom of the people's labour," which meant in practice the freedom of the strong to exploit the weak. The general economic condition of the country, at a time of apparent prosperity, may be gauged from the fact that the Russian peasant pays, as compared with the German, two and a half times as much for cotton and sugar, four and a half times as much for iron, six times as much for coal.[1] The other side of the picture must also be taken into consideration. The expansion of industry not only created an industrial proletariat but it also called into existence a class of wealthy manufacturers ; and the one was no less incompatible with the maintenance of an arbitrary and autocratic regime than the other. In a word, Russia had passed irrevocably into the stage of capitalism ; she had fallen into line with Western civilization, and her methods of Government, however suitable for a peasant Empire, now became a hopeless anachronism.

The Social Democrats.

The new economic situation was reflected in the transformation of political parties. The chief revolutionary party was known by the name of Social Democrats, and its programme marked in many ways a distinct advance upon that of its predecessors. In the first place it recognized that the centre of political gravity was shifting permanently from the landed to the mercantile interests, in other words, that the field for revolutionary propaganda was to be found in factories and workshops, and not in villages. The older schools of thought, revolutionists and conservatives alike, had clung to the hope that it would be possible for Russia to escape from capitalism and the fruit it bears—a dominating *bourgeoisie.* Imbued with the socialistic principles of Karl Marx, the new school no longer set its face against the current, but openly proclaimed that "the worse things are now, the more complete will be the crash." However much sentimentalists might affect regret at the passing away of the old order, it could no longer be pretended that Russia was immune from the ordinary laws of evolution. In the second place it perceived that all dreams of social reconstruction were fantastical until the ground had been cleared by a political revolution. The earlier revolutionaries believed that social and political changes should take place at one and the same moment, that the mere institution of parliamentary Government would not in itself improve the condition of the people. On the contrary, it would substitute for a worn-out inefficient bureaucracy an energetic and grasping *bourgeoisie,* which would grind the faces of the poor. This assumption, while containing an important element of truth, overlooked two important considerations. It ignored the fact that the propaganda of socialistic ideas, and indeed agitation on behalf of any progressive movement, are practically impossible in a despotic country. Whatever their drawbacks, parliamentary institutions afford a guarantee of individual liberty to an extent only possible under a constitutional Government. Moreover the proletariat was bound sooner or later to become politically self-conscious, and to wrest political power out of the hands of the *bourgeoisie.* Once Labour was established in a strong political position, it could then employ the resources of the State to bring about the social revolution. The State would take over the instruments of production—land, factories, and mines—and so not only ensure proper social conditions for the worker, but also enable him to obtain a more equitable share of the produce of his labour. The Social Democrats abandoned as hopeless the dream of an abrupt transition from Autocracy to Socialism, and were content to adopt more patient tactics; a constitutional regime would serve as a convenient half-way house. From these various considerations the conclusion was drawn that the revolutionists should concentrate their efforts upon the proletariat, relying upon peaceful propaganda and the methods of industrial warfare, rather than upon Terrorism. A new weapon was brought into play, and strikes, which were a familiar feature in England as far back as the fourteenth century, now became the instrument by which the Russian workman sought to redress his grievances. These grievances were mainly economic, but the Social Democrats, who generally assumed the lead in any industrial dispute, usually contrived to introduce a political element. In order to combat this danger, the Government had recourse to an extraordinary device. Through secret agents the police actively encouraged the formation of Trade-Unions among the working-classes, supplying them with funds, and even organizing strikes for the purpose of distracting their attention from purely political questions. At Moscow this remarkable experiment was conducted by Zubátoff, the Chief of Detectives, but the employers complained to the Government that the police were fomenting discord in their factories, while the workmen discovered that the secret agents were utilizing the opportunity to detect and remove the 'ill-intentioned.' The ultimate result was to strengthen the Social Democrats, and to deepen the political significance of the new Labour movement.

---

[1] Pares, *op. cit.* xii. 325.

Effects of the Japanese War (1904).

The turning-point in the history of Russia came with the Japanese War (1904). The war was unpopular with the nation, and the incapacity with which it was carried on completed the disillusion of the Russian people, and opened their eyes to the gross defects of the bureaucratic regime. The Government was utterly discredited, and its weakness in the face of overwhelming public criticism speedily became transparent. Plehve, the Minister of the Interior, was assassinated in July 1904. His administration had been most reactionary: the year before his death, no less than

1904–5 —

4867 persons are said to have been imprisoned or exiled without any regular trial.[1] Plehve was succeeded by Prince Mirsky, a more enlightened and humane statesman, who invited the reformers to submit their grievances. They hastened to avail themselves of so unique an opportunity. The 'Eleven Points,' drawn up by the representatives of the *Zemstvos* meeting in conference at Petrograd (November 1904), received the enthusiastic support of the professional classes. They demanded:

"(1) Inviolability of person and domicile, so that no one should be troubled by the police without a warrant from an independent magistrate, and no one punished without a regular trial.

"(2) Freedom of conscience, of speech, and of the press, together with the right of holding public meetings and forming associations.

"(3) Greater freedom and increased activity of the local Government, rural and municipal.

"(4) An Assembly of freely elected representatives, who should participate in legislation and control the administration in all its branches.

"(5) The immediate convocation of a Constituent Assembly to prepare a Constitution on those lines." [2]

In addition they sought the abolition of the so-called 'temporary' ordinances, which in reality were more permanent than the laws which they affected to interpret, an amnesty for political prisoners, and freedom of public instruction. These demands were backed up by a series of banquets and demonstrations. Public excitement was growing, and the atmosphere seemed charged with electricity. A spark only was needed to produce a conflagration; this was supplied on January 22, 1905—a day marked in the Russian calendar as Red Sunday.

'Red Sunday' (January 22, 1905)

Hitherto the Reform Movement had been confined mainly to the educated classes, but now it was joined by the industrial proletariat. Father Gapón, a young priest, had organized in Petrograd a trade-union of factory workers, corresponding to that initiated by Zubátoff at

---

[1] Wallace, *Russia*, 691.

[2] *Ibid.* 692.

1905 — Moscow, and enjoying in the same way police protection. On January 15, a strike was declared on account of the dismissal of two workmen, and the strikers demanded an eight hours' day, better wages, improved sanitary arrangements, and arbitration boards. The Social Democrats now intervened, and the movement, which originated in a purely industrial dispute, rapidly acquired a political complexion. Gapón, recognizing that his control over the workmen was rapidly weakening, and carried away, it is said, by the prevailing excitement, fell in with the programme of the revolutionaries and attempted to recover his waning influence by appealing in person to the Emperor. On Sunday, January 22, a great procession of strikers, with their wives and children, was organized for the purpose of presenting a petition at the Winter Palace: this petition voiced the political as well as the industrial grievances of the Russian people. The demonstration was peaceful, but the troops fired upon the dense crowds which filled the suburbs. Gapón himself escaped unhurt, and his subsequent career is shrouded in some mystery.[1] But though the demonstration had failed to achieve its immediate purpose, public feeling in Russia was stirred to its depths. It was, moreover, a tangible sign of the political awakening of the working-classes, whose entrance into the Reform Movement gave it a broad democratic basis and enlarged its prospects of success. The next few weeks witnessed an epidemic of strikes in various parts of Russia, and innumerable assassinations, culminating in the murder of the hated Grand Duke Sergius, the Emperor's uncle. Disorder was rampant throughout the Empire, and to calm the public agitation the Emperor yielded to the demand for a National Assembly. On March 3, 1905, he announced his intention "to convene the worthiest persons possessing the confidence of the people, and elected by them to participate in the drafting and discussing of legislative proposals." At the same time memorials were invited as to the "improvement of the State organization and the amelioration of the national welfare." As a result of this invitation the professional classes spontaneously organized unions comprising, among others, doctors, lawyers, teachers, engineers, clerks, and railway employees; these soon combined to form a huge Union of Unions. In all cases the programme was almost exactly identical; everywhere the cry was raised for genuine parliamentary institutions, and the elementary rights of citizenship. The current of progressive opinion was strengthened at this juncture by the news of the battle of Tsushima (May 27), when the Baltic fleet, which had been sent to the Far East to wrest from Japan the command of the Pacific, was destroyed by the great Japanese admiral, Togo. A deputation of the *Zemstvos* urged the Emperor not to delay the summons of national representatives: "At this terrible hour of the nation's trial, great is your responsibility before God and Russia."

---

[1] He subsequently returned to Russia, entered into relations with the Government, and was killed by the revolutionaries as a spy in 1906.

The General Strike (October 1905).

After a lapse of two months there appeared on August 19 the 'Bulýghin Constitution,' as it was termed. It was received with widespread dissatisfaction. Instead of a parliamentary assembly with full legislative powers, it set up an Imperial Duma, which was to be merely consultative; it established a very narrow franchise which excluded factory operatives, country doctors, country schoolmasters, and other rural residents without property; and it also left the fundamental principles of Government unchanged, preserving intact the Autocratic Power and refusing to admit the principle of ministerial responsibility. The result was a general political strike. Under the inspiration of Khrustalév, a lawyer of great capacity, the workmen had formed a central organization, known as the Council of Labour Delegates, which rapidly assumed the authority and significance of a 'working men's Government.' It even extended its control over the unions of the professional classes, and at the end of October it proclaimed a general strike. Newspapers suspended publication; the supply of electric light was cut off; employers were bidden to close down their factories under penalty of wrecking; magistrates and doctors, among other professions, participated in the strike; while the railway men on their part were already

1905 out owing to the report that the representatives of their union had been arrested. The whole social system of the Empire came to a standstill, and no alternative remained to the Government but to give way. Completely cowed by this remarkable manifestation of the strength of the progressive movement, the Government issued the Manifesto of October 30.

The October Manifesto (1905).

The October Manifesto marked an epoch in the history of the Reform Movement. In unmistakable terms it promised the elementary rights of citizenship—inviolability of person, freedom of conscience, liberty of speech, and the right of association and public meetings. The Duma was endowed with legislative functions, and no law was to be valid without its approval. There was also promised an extension of the franchise—a promise carried into effect by the decree of December 24, which enfranchised the professional and working-classes. But these concessions cut at the very root of the power hitherto wielded by the police and local officials. They therefore made a determined effort to gain back the ground they had lost by the massacre of their opponents. A union of Reactionaries was formed under the name of "Genuine Russians"; and, though they had no following in the community at large, they proved dangerous from their close co-operation with the police, who organized a series of outbreaks with the aid of the "casual criminal class." This reactionary outburst "was vented chiefly on the peaceable Jewish population inhabiting the towns of the south-west and southern provinces. These poor people were pillaged and maltreated for several days to such an extent that in Western Europe their sufferings awakened a general feeling of commiseration, and the Russian word *pogróm* (devastation), by which the disorders were commonly designated, became for Englishmen a familiar term. . . . It is difficult to imagine how the Conservative or the Reactionary cause would be advanced by stirring up the hatred of the Russian lower classes against their Jewish fellow-citizens." [1] The most probable explana-

Russian 'pogróms.'

---

[1] Wallace, *op. cit.* 716-717. See also I. Zangwill, *The Melting Pot* (ed. 1914), Appendix.

tion of these atrocities appears to be that "an anti-revolutionary demonstration was required for party purposes." The complicity of the authorities was notorious, the police having it in their power to check the *pogróms* without difficulty whenever they thought fit.

The First Duma (May 10–July 21, 1906).

The first Russian Parliament, known as "the Duma of the national indignation," met on May 10, 1906. It contained over four hundred members, of whom only seven were Reactionaries. The most important group was that of the Constitutional Democrats, or "Cadets," as they soon came to be called; they represented the Liberal Party and numbered 153. Their chief rivals were the Octobrists, or Conservatives, who supported the Constitution as defined by the October Manifesto. They were recruited mainly from the landowning classes, but in the first Duma they gained very few seats owing to the brutal severity with which the Government had recently repressed agrarian disorders. The Labour group comprised 107 members; the Autonomists, who represented the minor nationalities like the Poles and wanted self-government, accounted for 63 members; there was also a large number of Independents who appear to have had no definite programme. The existence of the first Duma only covered a period of seventy-two days, and it was occupied by a struggle with the Government over the question of ministerial responsibility. The balance of power in the Duma was held by the Cadets, who were generally able to command a majority owing to the support which they received from the other groups in the Chamber. They demanded parliamentary institutions on the English model, that is, a Cabinet responsible to the Duma, and not to the Emperor; they also claimed full authority over legislation and finance. Before the Duma met, its power had been greatly restricted by the Manifesto of March 5, and other enactments; for example, it could not alter the so-called 'Fundamental Laws'; the army, navy, and foreign policy remained the sole province of the Emperor; and even the budget was safeguarded from parliamentary interference. In a word, the guarantees of civil liberties and genuine constitutional rule, foreshadowed in the October

1906 — Manifesto, were rendered null and void. The struggle between the Duma and the Government lasted over two months, and eventually the Court seemed on the point of consenting to a Cadet Ministry. But this was strongly opposed by Stolýpin, and his appointment as Premier was followed by the dissolution of the Duma on July 21. Nearly half the members withdrew to Viborg in Finland, where they issued a Manifesto calling on the nation to refuse taxes, and not to furnish recruits for the army. Yet while the country disapproved of the Government's action, it had no means of offering organized resistance, and the protests of the Duma leaders were made without effect. The increased rigour of the new administration was shown in the unprecedented extension of capital punishment, which was now inflicted for ordinary robberies, and even for insults to officials. More than six hundred persons suffered the death penalty under this regulation, while in a single year as many as 35,000 persons were actually banished, without trial, for alleged complicity in agrarian disturbances.

Conduct of a General Election.

In the elections for the new Duma every conceivable pressure was brought to bear in favour of the Reactionaries and the Octobrists. "For the Cadets, political propaganda was made impossible. The Cadet party was refused legal recognition; officials were dismissed for belonging to it. . . . Powers were freely used to disfranchise various classes of voters. . . . Unsatisfactory candidates were struck off the rolls or exiled; Jews were told that if they voted they would be expelled. Lists of candidates were officially circulated for the Reactionaries and the Octobrists. Other parties were punished for naming their candidates. In towns voting papers were withheld by the police from a quarter or even a third of the voters; polling places were reduced in number; the days for polling were not announced or even deliberately announced wrongly; peasant farmers were called away to their communes, under threat of fines, on the days fixed for the polling of small landowners. A circular from the Synod instructed the priests to 'take an active part and guide their flocks,' threatening the refractory 'with the wrath of God'; priests were to become candidates, wherever possible. In some towns the Reactionaries took away voting papers or even arrested their opponents." [1] In spite of these tactics, the Opposition carried the great majority of seats. Most constituencies deliberately chose candidates who were known to be in disfavour with the Government. In the case of twenty-five provinces, nearly one-third of the elected representatives had been imprisoned, or exiled, or dismissed from the public service. Of the Duma as a whole more than a quarter had suffered 'administrative punishment.' The Social Democrats, who had stood aloof from the first general election, now obtained between fifty and sixty seats.

The Second Duma (*March* 5–*June* 16, 1907).

The second Duma assembled on March 5, 1907. Its existence was stormy and short-lived. The crisis was reached when the Government suddenly demanded the exclusion of the Social Democrats on grounds of disloyalty to the throne. The Duma appointed a committee to investigate the charge, but the ministry had already resolved upon its course of action, and the Duma was dissolved on June 16. A new electoral law was now promulgated, although legally no modifications were valid without the Duma's consent. A large number of seats were taken away from those parts of the Empire which had returned Opposition members; various sections of the community were disfranchised; and the whole electoral system was so manipulated as to place the issue of the elections in the power of the landowners. The result was reflected in the third Duma, which met on November 14, 1907; the Octobrists obtained 153 seats, while the Cadets were reduced to 54. The most important action of this Duma was to liberate the peasant from the control of the Commune by substituting individual ownership of peasant lands for communal ownership. In 1912, after completing the appointed period of five years, the third Duma was dissolved. In the general election which followed, the Centre, composed of Nationalists and Octobrists, suffered a severe defeat; and, owing to the activity of the clergy, who took a prominent part in the elections, the victory was won by the Right. This gave the

The Third Duma (1907–191

---

[1] Pares, *op. cit.* xii. 370-371.

The Fourth Duma (1912–).

fourth Duma a reactionary character, since the Right contained no less than 155 members, while the Octobrists had only 132, and the Cadets only 52. A change now manifested itself in the attitude of the Octobrists. Hitherto they had supported the Government, but from this time they threw themselves into opposition owing to the failure of the Government to carry out the October Manifesto of 1905. This Manifesto, as we have already seen, promised personal inviolability, freedom of conscience, liberty of speech, right of public meeting and association, as well as freedom of parliamentary elections, and the cessation of government by 'exceptional' laws. The recent formation of a Progressive Bloc (1916) has, however, strengthened the hands of those who are endeavouring to transplant to Russian soil those conceptions of democratic liberty which are the bedrock of Western life.

The future.

We have sought to trace the history of the Reform Movement in Russia during the last hundred years. Its progress in the future will be watched with sympathy by those who believe that free parliamentary institutions will afford scope for the best elements in Russian society to assert themselves, and so efface the memories of past injustices. 'Righteousness exalteth a nation'; and the removal of those shameful disabilities[1] which have refused to the Jewish people "the common rights of civilized man," and the restoration to Poland and to Finland of their autonomy, would be for Russia not a source of weakness but a source of strength. In the words of a distinguished Russian scholar: "The sooner it gets to be recognized that the dignity and welfare of Russia crave freedom as well as authority, and that the only basis to unite both is law, the easier it will be to solve the problems set before a nation which has a great stake in the destinies of the world."[2]

---

[1] See L. Wolf, *The Legal Sufferings of the Jews in Russia* (with an Introduction by A. V. Dicey, 1912).

[2] Vinogradoff, *op. cit.* 276.

CHAPTER IV

RACIAL AND CONSTITUTIONAL PROBLEMS IN AUSTRIA-HUNGARY

(1815–1867)

1815–48

Character of the Habsburg monarchy.

THE history of Austria-Hungary in the nineteenth century is more complicated and involved than that of any other country in Europe. There is no single thread running through its development, as in the case of Italy or Germany; it is deficient alike in unity and coherence. This is due primarily to the fact that Austria is not a nation but a 'monarchical machine,' with as many racial problems as it contains nationalities. In one respect its history is admittedly unique. Other empires have been built up by the sword or by colonization; the Austrian Empire in the main is the product of marriages. Its foundations were laid in the thirteenth century when Rudolf I., Count of Habsburg, was elected Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire. He added to his countship Austria, Styria, Carinthia, and Carniola, while his successors acquired Hungary and Bohemia. Throughout its chequered career the House of Habsburg pursued with unwearied tenacity and astuteness a policy of self-aggrandizement, exploiting its possession of the imperial dignity for the expansion of its own hereditary dominions. Under its rule German national development was retarded for centuries, for the Habsburgs discouraged the solitary efforts made to consolidate the political unity of Germany. They endeavoured as much as possible to withdraw their German territory from the orbit of the Germanic system, thus adopting the very principle of separatism which had transformed Germany into a mere

1815–48 — congeries of feudal States. The opening of the nineteenth century found the Habsburg monarchy confronted with a dual problem. On the one hand, it strove to retain its ascendancy in German affairs—an ascendancy uncontested for five hundred years, but now challenged by the growing prestige of the military power of Prussia. On the other hand, it had to knit together as best it could an ill-assorted Empire, which threatened to crumble into ruin at any moment. "My realm," confessed Francis II. on one occasion, "is like a worm-eaten house; if one part is removed, one cannot tell how much will fall." We have already traced the struggle between Austria and Prussia for the hegemony of Germany.[1] We have now to deal with the internal development of the Austrian nationalities.

Metternich's domestic policy.

Metternich, the Austrian Chancellor, like the poet Hesiod more than two thousand years before, bewailed the fact that he had come into the world either too soon or too late. "Earlier, I should have enjoyed the age; later, I should have helped to reconstruct it; to-day I have to give my life to propping up the mouldering edifice."[2] Prevention was therefore, as he acknowledged, the keynote of the internal administration. "Govern and change nothing," was the beginning and the end of the Imperial programme. "We follow," said Metternich to an English statesman, "a system of prevention in order that we may not be compelled to follow one of repression. . . . We are firmly convinced that any concession a Government may be induced to make strikes at the basis of its existence. . . . Concessions properly so-called can only have to do with rights of sovereignty . . . they can only be made by a sovereign at the expense of the capital of his own existence."[3] The exigencies of the domestic situation thus forced Metternich to make Austria the great conservative barrier to all the progressive movements in Europe, to devote the whole resources of the monarchy to a life-long struggle with 'Jacobinism,'—the spirit of revolutionary unrest. He was shrewd enough to

---

[1] See Chapter II.

[2] *Memoirs*, iii. 395.

[3] Cited, A. F. Pollard, "The Germanic Federation" in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* x. 355 *seq.*

A. Rischgitz.

PRINCE METTERNICH (1773-1859).

From the Painting by Sir T. Lawrence.

recognize that it was impossible in the long run to encourage Liberalism in Germany or elsewhere, while pursuing a policy of repression at home. This was what Alexander, the Emperor of Russia, attempted to do, with disastrous effects upon his Polish provinces.[1] The Austrian Chancellor followed his principles to their logical conclusion when he refused to contaminate himself with revolutionary heresy, and when abroad—as at home—he never deviated from the course which he had marked out for himself in order to preserve intact the established order alike in Austria and in Europe.

Immobility of the Austrian State.

"Asia begins on the Landstrasse."[2] This famous saying of Metternich epitomised the oriental passivity and inertness of the Austrian State. The principles of constitutional government had made little headway in the Habsburg monarchy. "I also have my Estates," said Francis; "I have maintained their constitution, and do not worry them; but if they go too far I snap my fingers at them and send them home." While the national pulse of Germany throbbed under the vitalising influence of the War of Liberation, in Austria the public repose was not disturbed, and life flowed on in the old channels. Nor was any effort made, in imitation of the policy of Prussia, to meet the demand for constitutional reform by an energetic display of administrative activity. The monarchy discouraged all initiative and enterprise on the part of its servants, and the cumbrous machinery of the State was practically at a standstill. Austria was afflicted with all the evils to which a bureaucracy is prone, whenever it is not maintained at a high-water mark of efficiency by the stimulus of vigorous and enlightened public criticism. The various governmental departments—the State Conference, the State Council, and the Presidents of the Court Offices—instead of working together, pursued independent courses. The Austrian 'system' of government, in fact, was nothing more or less than stagnation in every direction, and the most uncompromising resistance to changes of any kind. Neither industry nor commerce flourished. Education was at a low level; for though elementary schools existed, the higher branches of knowledge languished. "He who serves me," said Francis, "must teach what I command"; and the police exercised a rigorous control over University teaching. No opportunity was afforded for any expression of opinion on public affairs. Metternich laid down the principle that "no Government can pursue a firm and undeviating course when it is daily exposed to the influence of such dissolvent conditions as the freedom of the press."

---

[1] *Infra*, p. 239 *seq.*

[2] A suburb of Vienna.

Causes of the Revolution of 1848.

The fundamental weakness of Metternich's famous 'system' was that it only retarded, it could not avert, the day of reckoning. It secured a fictitious appearance of unity, not by the heroic remedy of removing the sources of dissatisfaction, but by imposing compulsory silence upon the discontented elements. The forces of revolution, though veiled from sight, continued in active operation underground, and their eruption in 1848 was marked by a volcanic intensity which was all the more formidable because they had been so long repressed. These forces were extremely complex, and it is necessary to distinguish carefully between the different factors which combined to bring about the Revolution of 1848.

(1) *Intellectual unrest.*

(1) In the first place the efforts of the Government to check the spread of Liberal ideas were only partially successful. "All around the frontier," wrote Karl Marx, "wherever the Austrian States touched upon a civilized country, a cordon of literary censors was established in connexion with the cordon of custom-house officials, preventing any foreign book[1] or newspaper from passing into Austria before its contents had been twice or three times thoroughly sifted, and found pure of even the slightest contamination of the malignant spirit of the age." It was impossible, however, to exclude all progressive literature, and its influence upon the educated classes was all the greater since it was forbidden fare. The Universities focussed the intellectual unrest, and gave a powerful impulse to the various elements of disaffection. While on the surface Austria appeared to embody

---

[1] Even the works of Hallam were excluded as being too liberal: Seignobos, *Contemporary Europe* (Eng. ed. 1901), ii. 405.

what Mazzini termed "the Chinese principle of immobility,"[1] another contemporary writer drew a different picture: "There was a slow underground movement going on which baffled all Metternich's efforts. The wealth and influence of the manufacturing and trading middle class increased. The introduction of machinery and steam-power in manufactures upset in Austria, as it had done everywhere else, the old relations and vital conditions of whole classes of society; it changed serfs into free men, small farmers into manufacturing operatives; it undermined the old feudal trades-corporations, and destroyed the means of existence of many of them. The new commercial and manufacturing population came everywhere into collision with the old feudal institutions. The middle classes, more and more induced by their business to travel abroad, introduced some mythical knowledge of the civilized countries situated beyond the Imperial line of customs; the introduction of railways finally accelerated both the industrial and intellectual movement. There was, too, a dangerous part in the Austrian State establishment, viz. the Hungarian feudal Constitution, with its parliamentary proceedings, and its struggles of the impoverished and oppositional mass of the nobility against the Government and its allies, the magnates. Pressburg, the seat of the [Hungarian] Diet, was at the very gates of Vienna. All the elements contributed to create among the middle classes of the towns a spirit, not exactly of opposition, for opposition was as yet impossible, but of discontent; a general wish for reforms, more of an administrative than of a constitutional nature. . . . The reform plans bore the stamp of an innocuousness almost amounting to political virginity. A Constitution and a free press for Austria were things considered unattainable; administrative reforms, extension of the rights of the Provincial Diets, admission of foreign books and newspapers, and a less severe censorship—the loyal and humble desires of these good Austrians did hardly go any farther."[2] 1815–48

(2) But the desire for political reform was not the only,

---

[1] J. Mazzini, *Italy, Austria and the Pope* (1845), 22.
[2] Marx, *Revolution and Counter-Revolution*, 36-38.

(2) Agrarian discontent.

nor scarcely the most important, factor in the situation. It is doubtless true that there can be no Revolution without a Renaissance, that an intellectual stimulus is needed to awaken men from the apathy and stupor of servile acquiescence. Yet it is equally true that there can be no Revolution without economic distress, for the great mass of men are conservative in their instincts and are rarely moved to revolt except by some kind of economic pressure. The driving force of the Austrian movement in 1848 was primarily agrarian discontent. The peasants aspired to release themselves from the yoke of feudal servitude, and their immense importance in the Revolution is shown by the fact that once their grievances were redressed the insurrection itself rapidly collapsed. The Government, absorbed in routine and wedded to a policy of inaction, failed to take any steps to remove their economic disabilities. It lost an admirable opportunity to improve the condition of the rural classes in 1846, when the Polish nobles in Galicia rose in rebellion against Austria. The revolt was suppressed with the aid of the peasants, who eagerly welcomed an occasion to wreak their fierce vengeance upon their hated masters. The peasants expected their services to be requited by the abolition of their feudal dues, and their disappointment was severe when the State adhered to its traditional policy of *laissez-faire*. The discontent of the rural population furnished the enemies of the Government with a formidable instrument which they were able to exploit to good advantage. This combination of political and economic factors was destined, while it lasted, to prove irresistible.

The fall of Metternich.

The overthrow of the Orleans dynasty in France gave the signal for the outbreak of an insurrection at Vienna. The University led the way with a petition which was presented to the Emperor by two professors on March 12. The next day a popular deputation voiced the demands of the people for a constitutional regime. The crowded streets were thronged with citizens, and a spark alone was needed to kindle the flames of revolution. Nor was this long delayed; the populace, as very commonly happens, came to blows with the troops, and amidst the intense excitement

1848 — aroused by the loss of life anarchy reigned supreme in the capital. Abandoned by the Imperial Court, whose interests he had served so faithfully, Metternich was compelled to surrender his office and seek refuge in exile. His faults as a statesman had been great, and the association of his name with a reactionary political system which delayed the constitutional development of Europe for a generation makes it even now difficult to form a balanced opinion of his merits. Yet one achievement will stand for ever to his credit. Throughout his long tenure of power he strove to preserve the peace of Europe, and he secured for a world drenched with the blood of the Napoleonic wars the repose it sorely needed. The fall of the old Chancellor was the first victory achieved by the Revolution. Other triumphs followed in rapid succession. The whole fabric of Austrian government collapsed, indeed, with surprising ease. An Imperial manifesto announced wide and far-reaching concessions. Not only did it contain the promise of a Constitution, but as a liberal instalment it forthwith established freedom of the press and a National Guard, and it also summoned a Combined Diet of all the provincial Estates of the Empire. A Committee of twenty-four citizens administered the affairs of Vienna, the instruments of its authority being the National Guard and the Academic Legion, composed of University students. Without waiting, however, for the joint meeting of the Estates, the Ministry issued the new Constitution on April 25. This had already been laid before an assembly of notables, and on a first examination its terms appeared sufficiently comprehensive. It proclaimed the indivisible unity of the Austrian State, which was to comprise all the dominions of the Habsburg Empire, exclusive of Transleithanian territories, namely, Hungary, Croatia and Transylvania. It converted an autocratic system of government into a constitutional monarchy, based upon the rights of the individual to civil and religious freedom. Without abolishing the provincial Estates, it created a General Parliament (*Reichstag*), composed of two Chambers, and it recognized the principle of ministerial responsibility. While it undoubtedly marked

The new Constitution.

in many ways a notable advance, the new Constitution aroused widespread dissatisfaction. The democracy of Vienna would have nothing to do with "a nondescript aristocratic Constitution, and an electoral law based upon the old division of Estates"; and the attempt to dissolve one of the democratic organizations (the Central Political Committee), which was usurping the authority of the Executive, provoked a fresh insurrection on May 15. The Government bowed before the storm, and not only restored the Central Political Committee, but also modified the Constitution on democratic lines, establishing universal suffrage and substituting a single chamber for a bicameral parliament. The Imperial Court deeply resented the concessions wrung from it by popular pressure, and the Emperor, alarmed for his safety, fled from Vienna to Innsbruck, where he was soon followed by the aristocracy and middle classes. "Here the Counter-Revolutionary Party found an asylum, from whence, uncontrolled, unobserved, and safe, it might rally its scattered forces, repair and spread again all over the country the network of its plots. Communications were reopened with Radetzky, Jellacic, and with Windischgrätz . . . intrigues were set on foot with the Slavonic chiefs, and thus a real force at the disposal of the Counter-Revolutionary *camarilla* was formed, while the impotent ministers in Vienna were allowed to wear their short and feeble popularity out in continual bickerings with the revolutionary masses. . . . Thus the policy of leaving the movement of the capital to itself for a time—a policy which must have led to the omnipotence of the movement party in a centralized and homogeneous country like France—here in Austria," as Marx acutely observes, "in a heterogeneous political conglomerate, was one of the safest means of reorganizing the strength of the reactionists."[1]

Insurrection of May 15.

Meeting of the General Diet.

A few days after the departure of the Emperor, the Ministry furnished one more display of its impotence by attempting to disband the Academic Legion—the very mainspring of the revolutionary movement. Its ignominious failure dissipated the final shreds of its authority, and as a result the control of affairs passed into the hands of a new Committee of Public Safety. On July 22 was opened the General Diet; as it was elected on the basis of universal suffrage, the Slav element predominated and the German democrats found themselves in the minority. The constitutional issues of the Revolution, grave enough in themselves to tax all the resources of Austrian statesmen, were now still further complicated by the most intricate national issues. We shall have occasion to show how the Hungarian movement suffered shipwreck owing to the internecine conflicts of the Magyars with the races in their midst.[1] The course of events in Austria revealed the same tendencies at work. In the parliamentary arena of the Austrian Reichstag the discords of rival nationalities disclosed the irreconcilable feud which divided the Germans and the Slavs. The forces of reaction found their best ally in the divisions which reigned in the nationalist camp.

---

[1] Marx, *op. cit.* 76-77.

Conflicting national aspirations.

The German democrats had fallen under the spell of the national movement, which was seeking to build up a United Germany and to combine together all the *disjecta membra* of the German body under a single head. They desired to merge Austria in Germany, and demanded that Austrian representatives should have a seat in the Frankfort Assembly. In this enthusiasm, however, they stood almost alone. The German provinces of the Austrian State do not appear to have shared their ardour, while the Government at any rate was naturally reluctant to compromise the integrity of the Habsburg monarchy. But the chief opposition came from the Slav races of Austria. The Czechs of Bohemia had no desire to see Cisleithanian Austria incorporated in a German Empire, for this would have given the deathblow to all their national hopes. Bohemia had never forgotten that she was once an independent kingdom, and to this day indeed she still cherishes her proud traditions. She was jealous of German ascendancy, and on the ground of 'historic rights' strove to acquire administrative autonomy. While German writers contended that "Bohemia could only exist, henceforth, as a portion of Germany, although part of her in-

Bohemia.

---

[1] *Infra*, p. 144 *seq.*

1848 — habitants might yet, for some centuries, continue to speak a non-German language," the Czechs, under the leadership of the great Bohemian historian, Palacky, resolutely refused to be merged in an all-embracing German State. Even before 1848 the dormant spirit of nationality was being awakened by the revival of the Czech language and the study of Slavonic antiquities. A new incentive to national self-assertion was now supplied by the aggressive provocation of the two dominant races of the Austrian Empire—the Germans and the Magyars. It bore tangible fruit in a Pan-Slav Congress held at Prague in June 1848 as the Slav rejoinder to the German Assembly at Frankfort. Whether the dream of a great Slavonic Confederation uniting all the scattered branches of the Slav race was seriously entertained is open to question. Yet the indiscretions of Slav enthusiasts afforded a handle to their adversaries, who discerned in Pan-Slavism the dread shadow of the Russian autocracy. These fears were apparently unfounded. Bohemia was content to remain an integral part of the Austrian monarchy, though it claimed an independent national existence, and stoutly resisted absorption in a purely Germanic body. Thus, on the one hand, the Germans wished either to 'merge' Austria proper in Germany, or in any case to maintain the ascendancy they had so long enjoyed over the subject races—the Czechs of Bohemia and the Slovenes of Styria, Carinthia and Carniola. The Transleithanian provinces of the Empire—Hungary, Croatia and Transylvania—they were willing to yield up to the Magyars. The Slavs, on the other hand, protested against this division of the spoils between the Germans and the Magyars. Instead of a centralized bureaucratic State, their programme was a confederation of national States, in which ample scope would be afforded for the full political development of all racial communities.

Failure of the Bohemian movement.

For the moment the Czechs appeared in a fair way of realizing their ambitions. The Imperial Court, true to its traditional policy of playing off one race against another, saw in the clash of national ideals the means of turning the provinces against the capital. Bohemia was encouraged in her resistance to German domination. With the approval of Prince Windischgrätz, who was in command of the Austrian army, the Bohemian administration under Count Thun renounced the authority of the Austrian ministry, and established an independent Government. These proceedings, though condemned by the Vienna Cabinet, received the sanction of the Emperor. But the nationalist movement in Bohemia proved short-lived. It was wrecked by a premature outbreak of the democrats at Prague, who thought to follow the example set by Vienna and make themselves masters of the situation. The insurrection was speedily crushed by Windischgrätz, who bombarded the city and reduced the rebels to submission. The Reaction had gained its first victory over the Revolution, and it reaped a fruitful harvest. It raised the spirits and heightened the self-confidence of the army, for it taught the lesson that insurgent democracy, fighting in barricaded streets, was not always invincible. Thus it broke the spell which the revolutionary exploits of Paris, Berlin and Vienna had cast over the mind of Europe. At the same time it intensified the hostility of the rival nationalities. The Germans regarded the collapse of the Bohemian separatist movement in the light of a national triumph. The Slavs, rendered innocuous to the Austrian Government by their failure to establish a confederation, were now employed by it as a weapon against the democracy of Vienna. Their conviction that the success of the German national movement would permanently impair their own prospects of independence made them a pliant instrument in the hands of the very party to whom they owed their downfall. They may also have hoped to win from the gratitude of the Government what they had failed to wrest from its fears. If this was their calculation they were destined to be deeply disappointed; yet it explains what the enemies of the Slavs bitterly called their 'infamous conduct' in the Austrian Constituent Diet, which assembled at Vienna on July 22. We have already seen how the Slav deputies preponderated in the Diet, and they proceeded to make "a systematic war upon the German element," who formed the minority on the Left. The latter were admittedly "the chief supporters of revolutionary progress," but in the Revolution of 1848 the forces of nationality everywhere carried greater weight than the forces of Liberalism, and where they came into collision Liberalism invariably succumbed. Torn by racial dissensions, the Assembly failed signally to utilize its unique opportunities, and the first constitutional experiment attempted in Austria was a complete failure. One reform alone emerged out of the protracted debates of the Diet, the only enduring result of the Revolution, amidst so much that was transitory. This was the emancipation of the peasants from feudal servitude. All parties in the Reichstag were agreed as to the need for the abolition of forced labour, but they were divided on the question of compensation. The Government insisted that the landowners should receive compensation for the loss of the services paid them by the peasants; and this was done in spite of the opposition raised by the democratic party.

End of the Vienna Revolution.

Meanwhile, the populace in the Austrian capital displayed ominous symptoms of unrest. The hopes which they had at first reposed in the Reichstag were speedily disillusioned by the alliance of the Slav majority with the party of reaction, and they were also disquieted at the prospect of a Counter-Revolution whose advent was now momentarily expected. After two dangerous riots the disaffection of the masses culminated with an Imperial decree (October 3), dissolving the Hungarian Diet and declaring war upon the Magyar nationalists. The Viennese democracy had taken up with enthusiasm the cause of the Magyars, whose movement showed the same democratic leanings as their own, and when Latour, the Minister of War, ordered the troops stationed in Vienna to march against the Hungarians, the people resisted their departure and broke out in open insurrection. Latour was murdered, and the Emperor was made to revoke the manifesto of October 3. This marked the turning-point in the Revolution. The Emperor, who had returned to Vienna at the wishes of the Reichstag, again fled from the capital, and set up his court at Olmütz, whence he published a manifesto denouncing the revolutionary disturbances, and appealing for support to the provinces. At the same time the Slav majority in the Reichstag transferred

1848 —

itself to Brünn, leaving the German rump to sink into the condition of a mere local committee. The end of the Revolution was not long deferred. On October 11 Windischgrätz, who had won great prestige by his victory over the insurrection at Prague, announced his intention to march on Vienna. On October 16 his authority was confirmed by an Imperial edict, and a few days later the capital was invested on all sides by the Austrian army. In spite of the heroic resistance of the Viennese, organized by a Napoleonic veteran, Joseph Bem, the city was taken on October 31. The fall of Vienna could only have been averted by the intervention of the Magyars at an early stage in the struggle. But the Diet, hidebound by 'constitutional conventionalities,' was loath to summon the Hungarian army to its assistance. The Hungarian Government, anxious to conduct the Revolution on lines of strict legal propriety, awaited the formal authorization of the Reichstag before venturing to invade German territory. This perfunctory policy was a mistaken one, for revolutions are not made with rosewater. Events soon showed that the fate of the Magyar Revolution was bound up with that of the Viennese Revolution, for the overthrow of the latter at once set the forces of reaction free to concentrate all their strength upon the destruction of the former. At the last moment, indeed, an attempt was made to raise the siege of Vienna, but the Austrians had availed themselves of the delay to complete their preparations, and in an encounter at Schwechat they easily drove back the relieving forces.

The Bach system

Now that the army had become master of the situation, the position of affairs was radically changed. There was no longer any need to conciliate democratic opinion, and the administration was therefore placed in the hands of Prince Schwarzenberg—the brother-in-law of Windischgrätz—who was a reactionary, pure and simple. Devoid of scruples, and endowed with a strong, determined nature, he was inflexibly resolved to preserve the integrity of the Austrian monarchy. He fought successfully against the attempt of the Frankfort Assembly to absorb German Austria in Germany and against the efforts of the Magyars to emanci-

1849–51 pate Hungary. The Constitution drafted by the Reichstag—which had been allowed for the time being to continue its labours at Kremsier—with its elaborate exposition of 'fundamental rights' (*Grundrechte*) and large concessions to federalist prejudices, was contemptuously thrown aside. The new Constitution, imposed on the Empire by Imperial authority (March 4, 1849), proclaimed in every line the indivisible unity of the monarchy, and welded once more into a centralized bureaucratic State all the heterogeneous dominions of the Austrian Crown. The position of the Government was enormously strengthened by the collapse of the Hungarian Revolution a few months later, and it became absolutely impregnable after the humiliation of Prussia at Olmütz[1] sealed the fate of the German national movement also. Victorious at length over the disruptive forces of Magyar and German nationalism, one thing alone was needed as the coping-stone of the edifice of Reaction. This was supplied on December 31, 1851, by the issue of an Imperial rescript annulling the Constitution of March 4. Henceforth, even the pretence of constitutionalism was openly set aside, and the monarchy pursued the course of naked absolutism. The period of reaction is known by the name of 'Bach's system,' although its leading characteristics were imprinted on it by Schwarzenberg. None the less, it was not an era of blind reaction. Constitutional reform in the body politic was dead; but administrative and economic reforms were vigorously taken in hand. One valuable treasure was rescued from the shipwreck of all the hopes with which the movement of 1848 had opened. The abolition of serfdom remained the sole practical outcome of the Revolution, and no attempt was made to restore the old feudal institutions, compulsory labour and seigniorial justice. This was the course of the Revolution in Austria; we have now to trace the course of the corresponding movement in Hungary.

In Austria-Hungary, as in Italy and Germany, the Revolution of 1848 embraced two distinct movements,

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 66.

Comparison of the Hungarian Revolution with the German and Italian.

the one constitutional, the other national. The former sought to achieve the emancipation of individuals, the latter the emancipation of nationalities. In all three countries the two movements were in close alliance with each other. In Italy, for example, the combination of the forces of Liberalism with those of Nationalism was imperatively demanded by the nature of the political situation; the pettiest Italian tyrant was omnipotent against his subjects so long as he was backed by the resources of the Austrian Empire.[1] This combination was equally necessary, not in Vienna—where the revolution was exclusively Liberal, since the Germans, as the dominant race, had no national grievances—but in Hungary. The feudal privileges of the Hungarian nobles, who alone were represented in the Diet and were also exempt from taxation, were a great obstacle to constitutional progress. The nobles, however, were hardly likely to surrender their privileges at the bidding of Liberal reformers—unless their resistance was overborne by an outburst of national enthusiasm, such as led the members of the French National Assembly on August 4, 1789, to compete with one another in a generous rivalry of self-sacrifice and voluntary renunciation. Hence Liberalism in Hungary was driven into an alliance with Magyar Nationalism, as the only force which could enable it to triumph over opposition. But this alliance of Liberalism and Nationalism, so fruitful in Italy, was sterile, and even worse than sterile, in Hungary. The attempt of the Magyars to exclude other races in Hungary from the privileged position which they claimed for themselves, brought about the ruin not only of their own national movement, but of the constitutional movement, whose fortunes were bound up with it. Another important difference also emerges when we contrast the Hungarian revolution of 1848 with the Italian or the German revolution. In Italy and Germany the national movement meant integration; in Austria-Hungary it spelt disintegration. The bare enumeration of the peoples comprised within the Habsburg monarchy—Germans, Magyars, Czechs, Slovaks,

---

[1] *Infra*, p. 166.

1791 — Roumanians, Ruthenes, Croats and Serbs—is impressive in its demonstration of racial diversities. Of these eight nationalities, we are told that each possesses "its own distinct culture and historic traditions, and, with the exception of the Croats and Serbs, each speaks a different language." [1] Thus the Racial Question overshadows every other problem in the Dual Monarchy, and if it is ever solved on strictly national lines, it would almost inevitably lead to the disruption of the Austrian Empire. We can best illustrate the complex issues involved in the Racial Question by tracing the fortunes of the Hungarian revolution.

Violation of Hungarian privileges.

For centuries Hungary had cherished the traditions of self-government and constitutional rights. Joseph II., the greatest of the Enlightened Despots, came into conflict with these traditions on the eve of the French Revolution, when he attempted to centralize his heterogeneous dominions and weld them into a single compact State. In violation of the Hungarian Constitution he refrained from summoning the Diet; enjoined the use of German as the official language; did away with the County Assemblies; and carved out the country into ten circles or provinces under German administrators. These drastic measures were revoked at the end of his reign, but the storm of opposition which they aroused bore permanent fruit in the revival of national feeling. The Diet of 1791 forced Leopold II., the successor of Joseph, to recognize the freedom and independence of the Hungarian nation. Henceforth the Diet was to meet every three years, and without its assent no taxes could be levied; it was also promised that Hungary should be governed "according to its own laws and customs, and not after the manner of other provinces." The concessions extorted from the Habsburgs in 1791 embodied in principle almost all the rights contained in the Magyar programme for three-quarters of a century to come. But in Hungary, as in England, the outbreak of the revolutionary and Napoleonic wars retarded constitutional progress for a generation, and diverted the energies of the nation into other

---

[1] The Croats and Serbs speak the same language. See R. W. Seton-Watson, *Racial Problems in Hungary* (1908), 3.

1812–25 — channels. Hungary relapsed into her former condition, until she was again awakened from her lethargy by the 'Magyar Renaissance.'

Revival of national feeling among the Magyars.

Language is one of the most potent of all national bonds; it enshrines the common memories and traditions which keep alive the sparks of nationality until they are ready to burst into a living flame. Conversely, the spread of a universal language is the most powerful solvent of national feeling. Now "by the middle of the eighteenth century," it has been said, "the Magyar language was in very real danger of dying out. Latin was the language of the Government, the administration, the law courts, of common intercourse between educated people; and the astute policy of Maria Theresa had won over the great nobles of Hungary to German customs and ways of thinking. Contact with the Court and intermarriage with the Austrian aristocracy rapidly turned them into little better than Germans, and their demoralizing example had begun to spread among the gentry and educated classes, while the towns were mainly German already."[1] In short, the Racial Question of the Habsburg Empire was in a fair way of being solved on the lines of least resistance by the gradual extinction of racial consciousness. The imprudent attitude of Joseph II., however, was a direct challenge to Magyar pride. He flung all compromise to the winds and pursued a policy of violent assimilation. Even more important, perhaps, was the influence of the French Revolution in arousing the dormant forces of nationality. The French Revolution not only shattered the antiquated social and political regime which had survived from the Middle Ages, it also dispelled those cosmopolitan tendencies whose influence was specially marked in the eighteenth century. Thus the revival of national feeling in Hungary, viewed from the broadest standpoint, was part and parcel of a movement which was general throughout Europe, and was particularly conspicuous in Italy and Germany. For a period of thirteen years (1812–1825) the Hungarian Diet was in abeyance, but the County Assemblies, 'miniature parliaments,' attended

---

[1] Watson, *op. cit.* 38.

1825–48 — by the nobles, served to keep up the traditions of independence and self-government, and their resistance to the Government forced it to summon a meeting of the Diet in 1825. At this Diet the cry was raised that Magyar should be established as the official language of Hungary. This demand was the beginning of the Language Question, which was to deluge the Hungarian plains in blood, and to this day is the most burning subject of controversy in Hungarian politics. The next few years witnessed the rapid progress of the Magyar tongue; they have been described, indeed, as the golden age of Magyar literature. In 1840 Magyar became the language of the Government; parish registers were ordered to be drawn up in it; and it was made compulsory for the clergy of all denominations. Four years later Magyar was constituted the official language of public business and debates in Parliament, and at the same time it became the language employed in schools, or at least a compulsory part of the curriculum.

The March Laws. Within twenty years the national aspirations of the Magyars, who alone enjoyed political power among the races of Hungary, had made great advance; but the demand for constitutional reform still remained unsatisfied. The permeation of Western ideas had transformed a movement, originally purely national and conservative, into a progressive and democratic movement. This new development made its influence felt in the proposals put forward in the Diets of 1844 and 1847, and it reached its zenith with the news of the revolutions at Paris and Vienna, news which fired the train already laid in Hungary. Under the inspiration of Kossuth the Address to the Crown demanded a national Government and a ministry responsible to Parliament. The revolutionary elements in the Diet were now in the ascendant. Their leader was Louis Kossuth, who had achieved a great reputation as editor of the *Pesti Hirlap*, a political journal commanding a wide circulation and extraordinary influence. It represented the extreme wing of the reform movement, the more conservative reformers finding a leader in Count Széchenyi. Kossuth's followers now seized the occasion to carry into operation the most extensive

1848 —

and far-reaching changes. The famous March Laws of 1848 were the work of barely a month, and in this short space of time the social and political conditions of Hungary were completely revolutionized. The sweeping reforms embodied in these March Laws exhibited the twofold tendencies of the Hungarian movement, to which we have already drawn attention. On the one hand, the influence of Liberal ideas was seen in the establishment of a responsible Hungarian ministry, whose radical programme amply justified its existence. Serfdom, feudal dues, and the seigniorial courts were abolished; the nobles lost their immunity from taxation; the franchise, hitherto the exclusive possession of the nobility, was extended to every Hungarian owning property worth thirty pounds; the duration of Parliament was restricted to three years, and it was to be convoked annually; direct election of representatives was substituted for the old electoral system based upon the County Assemblies and the towns; while other measures included liberty of the press, religious freedom, a national guard, and a national University. On the other hand, the influence of national ideas was seen in the practical separation of Hungary from Austria. The Diet abolished those departments of State—the Hungarian Chancellery and the Palatinal Council—through which the central Government held Hungary in political subjection. They were replaced by an independent Hungarian Cabinet, whose sphere of authority covered not only the internal administration of Hungary, but also foreign affairs, war, finance, and the control of the army and fortresses. In addition Transylvania was united with Hungary, which was to be garrisoned for the future by Magyar troops. The Government at Vienna, powerless in the face of the catastrophe which had befallen it, conceded all the demands made upon it from Budapest. In this way Hungary was rendered independent of Austria, which was henceforth united to it only by the tie of common allegiance to the Habsburg House. The Magyars had thus achieved a great triumph, but its permanence would naturally depend upon the use which they made of their victory. Upon

1848 — this issue now turned the destinies of the Hungarian nation.

The policy of compulsory Magyarization.

If the Magyars had acted with moderation, the course of the Hungarian revolution would have run a different course. Unfortunately they claimed for themselves rights of nationality which they denied to others. They were only one among seven nationalities, and they numbered less than half the entire population. At the beginning of the present century, for example, the inhabitants of Hungary numbered nineteen millions, of whom about eight and a half millions were Magyars, and only ten millions possessed a knowledge of the Magyar tongue. It is true that the Magyars were the most virile of the Hungarian peoples, but this did not justify them in refusing racial equality to their neighbours. From the first they sullied their cause by acting with the arrogance of a dominant race, and their own intolerance forged the weapon which their enemies employed for their destruction. The law of 1840 by which Magyar was substituted for Latin as the official language of public administration was in the circumstances reasonable ; and in process of time, owing to its superior culture, Magyar might well have become the common speech of the Hungarian nation. But the Magyar patriots, carried away by their enthusiasm, resolved on the rapid and complete Magyarization of their country, a policy which involved the racial extinction of all nationalities save their own. National life, it was proclaimed, is impossible without a national language, and the Magyars did not stop short of violent means in order to transform the non-Magyar races into 'genuine Magyars.' In a word, their idea was to wipe out all racial distinctions whatsoever in Hungary ; they had already captured the administration, and they endeavoured to control also the pulpit and the schools with a view to the forcible introduction of the Magyar tongue. This policy of compulsory assimilation, which was also pursued in parts of the German Empire [1] and in Russia,[2] was the source of great unrest in Eastern Europe during the nineteenth century.

[1] *Infra*, p. 236 *seq.*

[2] *Infra*, p. 238 *seq.*

The North Hungarian Slavs.

Other races in Hungary, however, were conscious of their nationality, and resented the oppression to which they were subjected. "Rather the Russian knout," said the North Hungarian Slavs, called Slovaks, "than Magyar domination, for the one could only enslave our bodies while the other threatens us with moral ruin and death." The French Revolution left its traces upon the Slovaks as upon the Magyars, and among them also the regeneration of the Slav language found expression in the growth of a native literature. In this linguistic revival two great names were prominent: Safarik, a professor, who collected the folk-songs and antiquities of the Slav race, and the national poet, Kollár, whose *Daughter of Slava* was published in 1824. This famous poem had a considerable political significance because it exalted the Slav name, revealing to the Slav world "the great memories of the Slav race, and its departed glories." Kollár protested against the unjust decree, "that in Hungary the Slav should bury his language." "Grant not the soil on which we dwell the sacred name of fatherland," he cried; "The true fatherland, which none can misuse, of which none can rob us . . . we carry in our hearts. . . . Dear are the woods, the streams, the homes inherited from our sires. But the sole fatherland which endures, and defies all shame and insult, is that unity of custom and language and mood which blends soul with soul." Elsewhere he added: "Scattered Slavs, let us be a united whole, and no longer mere fragments!" But he made clear that the Panslavism of his dreams was literary and not political, and the doctrine he enunciated in this connexion merits quotation. "It does not consist in a *political* union of all Slavs," he explained, "nor in demagogic agitation against the various governments and rulers, since this could only produce confusion and misfortune. Literary reciprocity can also subsist in the case of a nation which is divided into several States," or "which has several religions and confessions, and where differences of writing, of climate and territory, of manners and customs prevail. It is not dangerous to the temporal authorities and rulers, since it leaves frontiers and territories undisturbed, is content with

1848 — the existing order of things, and adapts itself to all forms of government, and to all grades of civil life."[1] It is not necessary for the cohesion of a State that all men should think alike, share a common speech, profess the same religion, and adopt uniform manners and customs. Unity does not demand uniformity, and diversity is more often a source of strength than of weakness. What the Slovaks wanted was explicitly set forth in a petition to the Crown in 1842, in which they represented that they "form a peculiar nationality, which is only capable of further progress through the cultivation of its own language, and which has for centuries offered its life and property to the common fatherland, enjoying in return equal rights with the other races of Hungary." But this perfectly reasonable claim to retain their language, and develop their own racial culture, was interpreted by the Magyars as a traitorous plea for autonomy and separation. Yet, even among the Magyars, moderate elements were not wanting to denounce a policy conducted on the narrowest racial lines, and voices were raised on behalf of the oppressed nationalities. The great Hungarian patriot, Count Stephen Széchenyi, whose loyalty was unquestioned since his economic writings had done so much for the regeneration of Hungary, warned his countrymen of the perilous course upon which they were embarking in their attempts to absorb the non-Magyar races by compulsion instead of by conciliation. "It is only our intellectual superiority," he said, "that can attach these races to the Hungarian nationality";[2] and he charged Kossuth with "goading [them] into madness against the Magyar nation." But his remonstrance went unheeded and the Magyar politicians, blinded by racial passions, proceeded to plunge Hungary into all the horrors of civil strife.

The South Hungarian Slavs.

The linguistic monopoly asserted by the Magyars brought them into conflict not only with the Slavs of North Hungary, but also with the Southern Slavs—the Croats and Serbs. The latter were settled in the kingdom of Croatia-Slavonia, usually called Croatia, lying to the south-west of Hungary, with which it was politically united. There were also

---

[1] Watson, *op. cit.* 56.

[2] *Francis Deák, A Memoir* (1880), 57.

Serbs to the east of Croatia, in the plain known as the Banat. 1848
The Croats, apart from their representation in the Hungarian Diet, had their own provincial Diet at Agram, where they were able to organize resistance to the forcible introduction of the Magyar language. The antipathy between the Croats and the Magyars was shown in Kossuth's statement that he could not find Croatia on the map, and it stimulated the growth of national feeling. 'Illyrism,' as this national movement among the Southern Slavs was called, was at first only a literary movement; its organ was the *Illyrian National Gazette*, edited by Louis Gaj. The Magyars, however, saw in it a menace to their political ascendancy, and their relations with the Croats became embittered. To complete this survey of the racial situation it is necessary to add that two other nationalities, the Roumanians—who constituted two-thirds of the population of Transylvania, yet were treated by the Magyars with the utmost contempt—and also the Saxons, opposed the desire of the Magyars to incorporate Transylvania in the Hungarian State. The position of affairs in Hungary was thus extremely critical; and the fate of the Magyar nation, as we have already said, hung in the balance. In asserting their independence they had thrown down the gage to the Habsburg monarchy, and the privileges they had extorted from its weakness would have to be defended, sooner or later, at the point of the sword. At the same time they were ringed round by hostile nationalities, who outnumbered them by two to three millions, and whom their racial intolerance had driven into the arms of their enemies. It was clearly impossible to carry on a foreign war abroad and civil war at home, and the Magyar leaders committed an irreparable blunder when they refused to conciliate the other races by timely concessions. Kossuth failed to recognize the wisdom and expediency, as well as the justice, of a generous and liberal policy; and as the apostle of a narrow racial creed he showed himself deficient in true statesmanship. He told the Serb deputation, as early as April 1848, that "before there could be any question of an equal treatment of the Slavonian with the Magyar tongue, appeal would have to be

1848 — made to the decision of the sword." The Slav nationalities took up the challenge and began to agitate for their separation from Hungary, the restoration of their ancient rights and traditional liberties, and the creation of a South-Slavonic State.

Civil war in Hungary. The Croats found a leader in Baron Jellacic, the son of a Croatian nobleman, who had been appointed Ban (viceroy) of Croatia. He professed himself in favour of the 'Illyrian' movement, which had now a definite political object—the formation of a Slav kingdom under Habsburg rule. It is doubtful whether Jellacic was genuinely concerned about Slav national ideals, or whether from the first he worked for the restoration of the Imperial power. Certainly the net result of his policy was to divide Hungary into two armed camps, and so render inevitable the failure of the Magyar Revolution. In pursuance of the course of action which he had marked out for himself, he expelled Magyar officials, and summoned the Croatian Diet to meet on June 5 at Agram. As soon as it met, the Diet proceeded to repudiate the authority of the Hungarian ministry established at Budapest, and to decree the separation of Croatia from Hungary. The Serbs of the Banat also seized the occasion to rise in revolt against the Magyars; and a Serb national congress, held at Carlowitz, set up a provisional Government and made common cause with their kinsfolk of Croatia. The spirit of insurrection extended even to the Slavs of North Hungary (the Slovaks), but the terror inspired by the 'Kossuth gallows' paralysed the efforts of the Slovak leaders to organize an effective resistance among their countrymen. The Magyars thus found themselves in the anomalous position of carrying on two distinct wars, the one against German Austria, the other against Hungarian Slavs, fighting the former in order to secure those rights of free national development which they denied to the latter.

The breach with Austria. The first step taken by the Magyars was to sow distrust between the Imperial Court at Innsbruck and the Ban of Croatia. Batthyány, the President of the Hungarian Cabinet, successfully worked upon the Emperor's fears that the real object of the 'Illyrian' movement was to establish an independent Slav Confederation; it is probable also that the Imperial Court was relying upon Magyar assistance to restore order in Vienna. The outcome of Batthyány's visit to Innsbruck was an Imperial manifesto suspending Jellacic from his office, and condemning the attempt of the Roumanians and Saxons in Transylvania to make themselves independent of the Hungarian Government. Jellacic, however, managed to win over the Emperor to his point of view, and was allowed to keep his position. The Hungarian Diet, under the influence of Kossuth, now resolved to settle the Croatian question by an appeal to arms. For a time the Imperial Government refused to commit itself either on the side of the Magyars or of the Slavs, but two considerations speedily forced it to a decision. Kossuth's financial policy, the issue of Hungarian paper money in place of Austrian notes, was evidently designed to pave the way for a complete breach between Austria and Hungary. Yet the Austrian Government would still have shrunk from a conflict, had it not also received the news of Radetzky's victory at Custozza (July 25) and of his entrance into Milan.[1] The time for action, therefore, appeared ripe, and early in September the Ban of Croatia, with the approval of the Imperial Government, opened the campaign by crossing the Drave and invading Hungary at the head of a Croatian army.

Course of the struggle between Austria and Hungary.

In the opening stages of the war fortune favoured the arms of Austria. The Hungarian army attempted to relieve Vienna, but met with a serious repulse at Schwechat (October 30), and during the next few months suffered reverse after reverse. On January 5 the Austrian general, Windischgrätz, the conqueror of Vienna, occupied the Hungarian capital, which had already been evacuated by the Government. This was followed a few weeks later by an overwhelming defeat of the Magyars at Kapolna, after which the campaign appeared at an end and the triumph of the Austrians seemed completely assured. The course of events, however, showed that in war it is the unexpected which happens. When by all the rules of warfare the Magyars were hopelessly beaten, they suddenly developed unsuspected powers of resistance; and their spirit, so far from being quenched by defeat, drew

---

[1] *Infra*, p. 173.

1849 — fresh inspiration from the disasters which had befallen them. They threw themselves into the struggle with renewed ardour, and their achievements astonished a world which had given up their cause for lost. In Transylvania, Bem, the Polish veteran who had organized the defence of Vienna, drove the Austrians and Russians[1] across the frontier of Wallachia and made himself master of the country. In the south, Perczel subdued the Serbs of Slavonia and the Banat; while the main army under Görgei, who was now commander-in-chief, inflicted a succession of defeats on the Austrians, even compelling them to withdraw from Hungary. This was the climax of the struggle, and if the Magyars had shown political wisdom they might have obtained from the Austrian Government honourable terms of peace. But the destinies of Hungary were in the hands of Kossuth, who was now practically dictator, and with Kossuth counsels of moderation had no weight. On April 14, elated by his victories, he took the most fatal step in his career by issuing a Declaration of Independence, deposing the Habsburg dynasty and proclaiming a Republic. His action was a direct challenge to the principle of 'Legitimacy'; and as such it afforded an excuse for Russian intervention. The Tsar Nicholas I. was the relentless enemy of all progressive movements; a nineteenth-century Don Quixote, his divine mission was to succour distressed autocrats. While Jellacic again advanced from Croatia, and the Austrian army once more approached from the west, the Russians poured over the Carpathians and entered from the east. It was impossible for the Magyars, overpowered by sheer weight of numbers, to save a cause that was doomed. The Diet made a last despairing effort to retrieve the situation by removing the grievances of the non-Magyar races, and acknowledging their right to the free development of their language. But the concession came too late to reverse the tide of events, and on August 11, Kossuth abdicated in favour of Görgei and took refuge across the Turkish frontier.[2] Two days later the Hungarian army under

---

[1] Russian forces had come to the assistance of the Austrians.

[2] He died at Turin in 1895.

Görgei surrendered at Világos to the Russians, and the Hungarian Revolution forthwith collapsed. 1849

Effects of the Revolution on Hungary.

The Austrian Government proceeded to exact a barbarous penalty, condemning to death a considerable number of those implicated in the revolutionary movement—among them, thirteen generals and Count Batthyány, the late Premier, who had striven throughout to avert war—and also imprisoning a great many others. In other respects the results of the struggle were equally disastrous, and Hungarian political development received an immense set-back. Indeed, the war brought neither satisfaction nor profit to any of the Hungarian nationalities. The Croats, who had rendered inestimable services to the Imperial Crown, were deprived of their Diet, while the Serbs of Southern Hungary, and the Saxons and Roumanians of Transylvania, were also denied the political privileges for which they had contended. The Magyars themselves lost every vestige of their constitutional liberties, and Hungary became a province of Austria like Bohemia. She ceased to be an independent national State, and her Constitution and administrative autonomy were completely suppressed. Croatia, Transylvania and Southern Hungary were made separate provinces, and the rest of Hungary was divided for administrative purposes into five districts. These measures entirely destroyed the political unity of the old Hungarian kingdom. The aim of Schwarzenberg, in fact, was to create a United Austrian State, and with this end in view he pursued a policy of the most rigid centralization. It was equally a policy of undisguised absolutism. "The former Constitution of Hungary," it was officially announced, "is annulled by the Revolution." The system of local government based on the County Assemblies was superseded, and administrative and judicial posts were filled by Austrian officials—Germans and Czechs. German was also substituted for Magyar as 'the State language'; and the assimilating processes of Germanization were now in full swing. On the other hand, it is fair to remark that the social changes of 1848—the most abiding effect of the Hungarian Revolution—were not disturbed, but were

1861–67 — had animated the 'forties. But Deák was a different leader from Kossuth, at once wiser and more moderate in his demands. There is a marked contrast between the Revolution of 1848 and the movement which culminated in the bloodless victory of 1867. In the first place, Kossuth was a revolutionist, and Deák a constitutionalist. "You may blow up whole fortresses with gunpowder," was a saying of Deák's, "but you cannot build the smallest hut with it." Taking his stand on strictly legal grounds, he showed a sound and remarkable grasp of constitutional principles. Without the consent of the Hungarian people, so ran the argument, the king had no power to set aside the Constitution in favour of an Imperial Parliament endowed with functions usurped from the Hungarian Diet. "Where would be the guarantee of the constitutional independence of Hungary," he asked, "if at a future period a successor of your Majesty, appealing to this precedent, should act in the same manner with our other laws and rights, and should by a command of his own power and authority suppress or modify these without the previous consent of the nation?" In a constitutional State, laws can only be abrogated "by the power which brought them into existence."[1] These words might have fallen from the lips of an English statesman. Deák fought the battle of freedom, as Englishmen did in the seventeenth century, by appealing to the bar of history and the verdict of legal precedents. In the second place, Deák throughout the struggle with Austria remained loyal to the monarchy. He took no part in the War of Independence of 1849. "We have no desire," declared the Hungarian Diet in an Address drawn up by Deák, "to endanger the existence of the Empire. We do not wish to dissolve the union." It admitted the need for joint action in the 'common affairs' of the monarchy. But "a forced unity will never make the Empire strong. . . . The position of an Empire as a great Power, whose unity can only be maintained by force of arms, is precarious."[2] In the third place, Deák upheld the free development of the individual nationalities, and the equal rights of Magyars and non-Magyars, so far as this was not incompatible with the political unity of the Hungarian State.

---

[1] *Ibid.* 168, 182.

[2] *Ibid.* 189-191.

The Ausgleich (1867).

The October Charter of 1860 owed its origin to Solferino; the Compromise of 1867 was the sequel of Sadowa.[1] The Emperor was alive to the necessity of conciliating his Hungarian subjects, who had held coldly aloof from the Austro-Prussian War, and in the event of another Austrian defeat might be tempted to make a second bid for independence. Deák was therefore approached with the question: "What does Hungary demand?" He made the famous reply: "Hungary asks no more after Königgrätz than she asked before it." But the favourable situation in which Hungary was now placed as a result of the war necessarily gave her the advantage in any bargain she might make with the sovereign. She also found a powerful ally in the Austrian foreign minister, Baron Beust, an enemy of Bismarck. Beust was determined at all costs to recover for Austria the ascendancy she had lost in German affairs, and urged Francis Joseph to yield to the Magyars in order to win their support for an anti-Prussian policy. He carried his point, and in 1867 the relations of Austria and Hungary entered upon a new stage. The celebrated Compromise (*Ausgleich*) established what is known as the Dual Monarchy. Strictly speaking, it embodied no new principles, for the independence of the Hungarian kingdom had always been a political axiom, though one frequently violated in practice. But the *Ausgleich* made the position of Hungary absolutely impregnable. Henceforth she was placed on a footing of complete equality with Austria, and obtained supreme control over the administration of her internal affairs. The Constitution was restored on the lines of the March Laws, and a separate Hungarian ministry was set up. On the other hand, Deák, as we have seen, recognized that Austria and Hungary shared mutual interests; united under one sovereign, it was expedient that they should co-operate for purposes of defence, and possess a common diplomatic service and a joint army. Hence the institution of a Common Ministry for the Austro-Hungarian monarchy, comprising ministers

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 73.

1867 — for foreign affairs, war, and finance. The ministry of finance administered the Imperial revenues, which defrayed the cost of the diplomatic service and the army. To establish control over the Common Ministers, a system of Delegations, or committees, was devised. These committees were two in number, one for Austria, the other for Hungary, each composed of sixty members, elected annually by their respective legislatures. In addition, economic conventions were drawn up between the two countries, regulating their commercial relations and custom tariffs.

Criticism of the Ausgleich. Viewed from the broadest racial standpoint, the Compromise was one-sided. "While it is true to describe the *Ausgleich* as the logical outcome of the Pragmatic Sanction," which in 1723 established the legal independence of Hungary, "subsequent events have none the less shown it to rest upon a far more cynical basis than that of historic evolution. The real motive force which underlies the Dual System is a league between the two strongest races, the Germans and the Magyars, who divided the Monarchy between them, and by the grant of autonomy to the two next strongest races, the Poles and the Croats, made them their accomplices in holding down the remaining eight."[1] The Slavs advocated Federalism instead of Dualism—in other words, the autonomy of all nationalities which could lay claim to 'historic rights.' Bohemia, in particular, found herself denied the position to which she considered herself traditionally entitled. Thus the settlement of 1867 contained within it the seeds of future discord, while within Hungary itself the racial intolerance of the Magyars has retarded the smooth working of the new institutions. Deák exhibited a statesmanlike grasp of the situation in the measures taken to reconcile the non-Magyars to the *Ausgleich*. To the Croats he offered the famous 'blank-sheet' to be filled in as they pleased. Croatia was given "complete autonomy in all matters of administration, justice, religion and education, and Croatian is everywhere the language of the legislature and executive." Foreign affairs alone remained the province of the Hungarian Diet, to which Croatia contributed forty members, while she had also her own Diet at Agram. At the same time an attempt was made to solve the vexed problem of the non-Magyar races in Hungary proper by the celebrated 'Law of Nationalities' (1868).[1] For the sake of the political unity of the State, Magyar was constituted the official language of Hungary both in Parliament and in all branches of the administration; but in the County Assemblies, courts of law and schools, the use of other languages was permitted. As the law stands, its provisions appear on the whole just and equitable. While preserving the administrative unity of the State by the use of a common language, it afforded opportunity to the different nationalities for the development of their racial culture. It achieved the fundamental purpose of the Magyars as expressed in the preamble to the Law of Nationalities: "All citizens of Hungary . . . form from a political point of view one nation—the indivisible unitary Hungarian nation—of which every citizen of the fatherland is a member, no matter to what nationality he belongs." It equally satisfied the 'lawful national claims' of the different races comprised within the Hungarian State. Unfortunately the Law of Nationalities appears to have been from the outset a dead letter. The condition of the Slovaks at the present day, for example, has been summed up by a competent authority in these words: "Their language has been banished from all secondary schools, colleges and seminaries, and is being steadily expelled even from the primary schools. It is excluded from the administration and from every public office; even on the railways and in the post-offices Slovak inscriptions are not tolerated. The Slovak press has for years been subject to brutal persecution. Right of assembly or association does not exist for the unhappy Slovaks, or indeed for the other non-Magyar races of Hungary. The small intellectual class is the victim of official pressure and persecution in every imaginable form; and the most drastic steps are taken to prevent the Slovak people from securing its due representation in Parliament. Nowhere has the 1868 —

---

[1] Watson, *Racial Problems in Hungary*, 137.

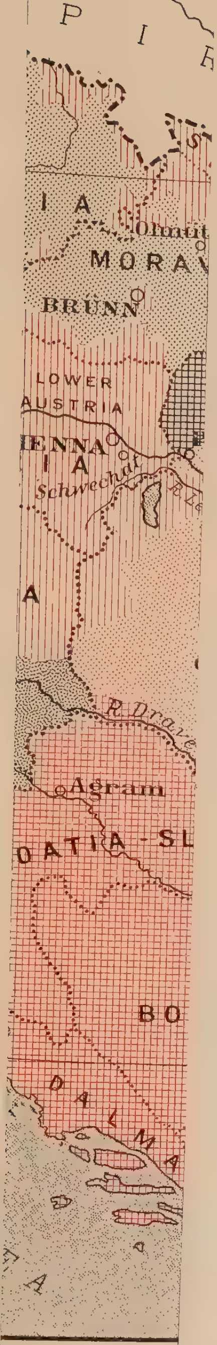
---

[1] Printed in Watson, *op. cit.* App. iii. The subject is exhaustively treated in *ibid.* 147 *seq.*

1868 — scandalous system of electoral corruption and violence weighed more heavy than among the Slovaks. . . . 'In Hungary the Magyar is the master.' The other races are mere helots."[1] Though half a century has elapsed since the *Ausgleich* created the Dualism of the Austrian Empire in its present form, the passage of time has not solved the racial problems of either Hungary or Austria. It has not reconciled the Roumanians, or the Serbs, or the Slovaks to the ascendancy of the Magyars, and it has not weakened the resolution of the Czechs to establish an autonomous Bohemian State.

---

[1] R. W. Seton-Watson, *The Future of Bohemia* (1915), 26.



ile

AUSTR

inces : Lower Austr

nd Silesia. Chiefly
lvania, Croatia-Slav
axons. The other t
lish, partly Ruthen

CHAPTER V

THE UNITY OF ITALY

(1815–1870)

1815

Italy in the Middle Ages.

FOR centuries Italy, in the phrase of Metternich, was nothing more than a geographical expression. One attempt after another to weld the Peninsula into a united kingdom had failed. The barbarians who overran Western Europe after the fall of the Roman Empire rapidly established themselves in Britain, Spain and Gaul; but Italy was too choice a prize to remain the undisturbed possession of any one people. The very greatness of her traditions conspired to retard her political development by making her the target of every ambitious conqueror. The Ostrogoths who ruled the Peninsula in the sixth century did not long survive the death of their great King, Theodoric, and the State which he had built up soon crumbled to the dust. Their successors, the Lombards, only achieved a temporary triumph, and served but to add one more element of disunion to those which already existed. At a later period Italy was distracted by the rival claims of the Empire and the Papacy, and the strife of their supporters—the Ghibellines and the Guelphs—turned every city into a hotbed of faction and disorder. At the close of the Middle Ages a new, and even darker, page of Italian history opened with the expedition of Charles VIII. across the Alps. Italy now became the cockpit of Europe, where foreign Powers contended for mastery. Her native princes sacrificed national aspirations at the altar of self-aggrandizement, and did not hesitate to invoke the aid of the foreigner in their internecine quarrels. Deprived of her natural leaders, Italy sank into the degraded condition

1815 — from which all the efforts of patriots like Machiavelli proved powerless to raise her.

Obstacles in the way of Italian unity.

In the nineteenth century more than one obstacle impeded the path of Italian unity. The most important was the fact that Italy lay under the heel of foreign domination. Austria was entrenched in the north; her satellites—princes of Austrian birth—ruled in Tuscany, Modena and Parma; while in the south a Bourbon dynasty governed the Two Sicilies (Naples and Sicily). Yet scarcely less important was the temporal power of the Papacy, which cut Italy into two halves, and was an insurmountable barrier to the unification of the Peninsula. The States of the Church had been created by Gregory I., the founder of the mediæval Papacy, at a time when the spiritual authority of the pontiff was the sole bulwark against Lombard aggression; and the temporal lordship then established was consolidated and extended by his successors in the chair of St. Peter. The weapon which Gregory had forged in the interests of Italy proved in the long run, however, detrimental to the best interests of Italy. It was impossible to unite Italy so long as she was divided by the Papal States; it seemed equally impossible to take from the Papacy a power backed by all the spiritual resources at its command. Lastly, the Italian people themselves had not yet attained to a full sense of national consciousness. Italy, like Greece, is a land where almost every spot has its own traditions and *genius loci*, a circumstance which served to accentuate local jealousies and to retard national growth. " In Italy," wrote Metternich, " provinces are against provinces, towns against towns, families against families, and—men against men." [1]

Italy and the French Revolution.

A new epoch began when Italy was drawn into the vortex of Napoleonic conquest. The Austrians and the Bourbons were driven from the Peninsula, the Papal States were annexed, and a uniform system of law and administration was everywhere established. These effects of French rule were evanescent: " Throughout Italy one stroke of the pen erased all our liberties, all our reforms, all our hopes. The old regime reappeared, pernicious as before, but surcharged with vengeance."[1] Yet the lesson that Italy was a nation, once learnt, was never forgotten. The Italian people had caught a glimpse of the Promised Land which was to be the goal of all their efforts for half a century, and its memories could never fade completely from their minds. Apart, moreover, from the temporary union which Italy had acquired, there was the priceless heritage bequeathed by the French Revolution, the privileges of equal rights before the law, religious liberty, freedom of the press, and self-government. As the tangible fruits of a national system of administration, they served to intensify the ardour and patriotism of the people.

---

[1] *Memoirs*, iii. 279.

1815
—

Italy after the Vienna Congress.

At the Vienna Congress national aspirations were ignored, and Italy was treated merely as a pawn in the diplomatic game. Austria emerged as the preponderant Power in the Peninsula, and the sole arbiter of Italian destinies; not only was she in actual possession of Lombardy and Venetia, but her influence controlled all the other States. A glance at the accompanying map will indicate the geographical situation of the different Italian States, whose political condition we have now briefly to describe. Lombardy and Venetia were constituted a kingdom under the direct rule of the Habsburg monarchy, but for administrative purposes they were divided into two provinces with separate governments centred in Milan and Venice. Elementary and secondary education were not neglected, but their effects were largely neutralized by the failure to give the educational system adequate scope. Fiscal burdens were extremely heavy; although the population was not one-eighth of the Empire, it paid more than a fourth of the total revenue; and all political activity was mercilessly repressed by a rigorous censorship and a tyrannical police system. Metternich confessed that "general dissatisfaction was prevalent." "The tedious progress of business"; he wrote, "the design attributed to Your Majesty of wishing to give an entirely German character to the Italian provinces; the composition of the courts, where the Italians daily see with sorrow German magistrates appointed to offices . . . are the main

---

[1] Mazzini, *Italy, Austria and the Papacy*, 76.

1845 — causes to which this discontent is ascribed."[1] Conditions were better in Parma, which was ruled by the widow of Napoleon, the well-meaning but weak Marie-Louise, and in Tuscany, "the only Italian State in which the corruption of a mild despotism has been preferred to the system of terror elsewhere dominant." On the other hand, in Modena all the evils of the Austrian 'system' were reproduced, while the restoration of Victor Emmanuel to the throne of Piedmont was at once the signal for the introduction of a reactionary regime. His first act was an attempt to deprive his subjects of the benefits which the French Revolution had brought in its train: "Setting aside all other laws, henceforward our subjects shall obey the Royal Constitutions of 1770, together with the statutes made by our Royal predecessors before June 23, 1800." The attachment of the people to the House of Savoy served to postpone for a time all chance of successful opposition, though the situation was full of menace for the Government. But nowhere were conditions so wretched as in Naples and the States of the Church. The Papal administration exhibited all the vices of an unregulated and chaotic tyranny, while Bourbon rule—which was disfigured by the worst excesses—was later to be described by William Gladstone as the "negation of God."

Mazzini's description of Italy in 1845.

"We are a people," wrote Mazzini in 1845, "of from one-and-twenty to two-and-twenty millions of men, known from time immemorial by the same name, as the people of Italy; enclosed by natural limits the clearest ever marked out by the Deity—the sea and the highest mountains in Europe; speaking the same language, modified by dialects varying from each other less than do the Scotch and the English; having the same creeds, the same manners, the same habits . . . proud of the noblest tradition in politics, science and art, that adorns European history; having twice given to Humanity a tie, a watchword of Unity—once, in the Rome of the Emperors, again, ere they had betrayed their mission, in the Rome of the Popes; gifted with active, ready and brilliant faculties . . . rich in every source of

---

[1] *Memoirs*, iii. 103.

1845 — material well-being that, fraternally and liberally worked, could make ourselves happy, and open to sister nations the brightest prospect in the world.

"We have no flag, no political name, no rank, among European nations. We have no common centre, no common fact, no common market. We are dismembered into eight States—Lombardy, Parma, Tuscany, Modena, Lucca, the Popedom, Piedmont, the kingdom of Naples—all independent of one another, without alliance, without unity of aim, without organized connexion between them. Eight lines of custom-houses, without counting the impediments appertaining to the internal administration of each State, sever our material interests, oppose our advancement, and forbid us large manufactures, large commercial activity, and all those encouragements to our capabilities that a centre of impulse would afford. Prohibitions or enormous duties check the import and export of articles of the first necessity in each State of Italy. Territorial and industrial products abound in one province that are deficient in another; and we may not freely sell the superfluities or exchange among ourselves the necessities. Eight different systems of currency, of weights and measures, of civil, commercial and penal legislation, of administrative organization, and of police restriction, divide us, and render us as much as possible strangers to each other. And *all* these States among which we are partitioned are ruled by *despotic* Governments, in whose working the country has no agency whatever. There exists not in any of these States, either liberty of the press, or of united action, or of speech, or of collective petition, or of the introduction of foreign books, or of education, or of anything. One of these States, comprising nearly a fourth of the Italian population, belongs to the foreigner—to Austria; the others, some from family ties, some from a conscious feebleness, tamely submit to her influence."[1]

Secret societies.

In these circumstances the prospects of a United Italy seemed remote. Confronted with arbitrary and suspicious Governments, debarred from freedom of political discussion,

---

[1] Mazzini, *op. cit.* 71-73.

1820 — jealously and rigorously controlled in all their movements, Italian patriots could only find an outlet for their energies in secret societies, or 'sects,' which now everywhere sprang up, but were particularly formidable in Naples. Whatever our opinion of these societies, whose activities were so marked a feature of the generation which followed the Vienna Congress, it must be remembered that they were the outcome of a system which closed up all other avenues of political activity. "We Italians," cried Mazzini, "have neither Parliament, nor hustings, nor liberty of the press, nor liberty of speech, nor possibility of lawful public assemblage, nor a single means of expressing the opinion stirring within us." He added, in words from which we can still draw inspiration: "Whenever a way remains open to you in a just cause for the employment of moral force, never have recourse to violence; but when every moral force is seared up—when tyranny stretches so far as formally to deny you the right of expressing in any manner soever what you conceive to be the truth—when ideas are put down by bayonets—then, reckon with yourself: if, though convinced [that] justice is on your side, you are still in a weak minority, fold your arms and bear witness to your faith in prison or on the scaffold—you have no right to imbrue your country in a hopeless civil war: but if you form the majority, if your feeling prove to be the feeling of millions, rouse yourselves, and beat down the oppression by force." "It is not the country," he told the English people, "that honours the memory of Hampden, of Pym, of Vane, and of other great republicans, that can successfully adduce against us a theory of Oriental submission."[1] In Naples the *Carbonari*, as they were called, were recruited from all the discontented elements whom the rule of Ferdinand I. had stirred up against his throne, and their influence was seen in the revolt which broke out in 1820. Inspired by the example of the revolution in Spain, the insurgents forced the hand of the Neapolitan King and wrested from him a Constitution, but elated by their easy victory they neglected to take adequate precautions against their real

The insurrections of 1820.

---

[1] Mazzini, *op. cit.* 85-86.

enemy—Austria. Ferdinand, in violation of his pledges to his subjects, treacherously summoned the Austrian army to his assistance. The rebels misjudging the difficulties of their situation wasted valuable opportunities, and their overthrow at the battle of Rieti speedily brought the insurrection to an ignominious conclusion. Whilst the embers of one revolt were being stamped out in Naples, another was being lighted in Piedmont. Here, also, the object of the rising was to establish a Constitution, and the King was faced with the alternative of giving way to the wishes of his people—a step involving war with Austria—or crushing the revolution by force. Victor Emmanuel shrank from either course, and cut the Gordian knot by abdicating the throne. He was succeeded by his brother, Charles Felix, during whose absence the regency was vested in Charles Albert. The latter, who was destined to play a conspicuous part in the liberation of Italy, was already known for his Liberal sympathies, and he was induced by the insurgents to proclaim the Constitution. But the concession was immediately revoked by the new King, and Charles Albert, remaining loyal to his allegiance, abandoned the movement. Civil war ensued, and at the battle of Novara the support of Austria was again decisive in bringing victory to the side of absolutism.

The insurrections of 1830.

The years which followed these abortive attempts at revolution in Naples and Piedmont were clouded with gloom for the Italian people. Reaction had triumphed, and it spared no efforts to intimidate the nation into complete submission. The severity of the Austrian regime was intensified, but while the immediate outbreaks which it provoked were ruthlessly repressed, it paved the way for its ultimate downfall by the hatred which it everywhere excited. Italy did not escape the effects of the French Revolution of 1830, which was the cause of outbreaks in Modena, Parma and the Papal States. The hope of French assistance proved, however, illusory. Louis Philippe was admonished by Metternich not to "embarrass the protective action which we may be commissioned from the highest quarters to take." Austria was given a free hand, and her intervention proved fatal once more to all prospects of success.

Austria and Italy.

The experience gained in these premature revolts, though purchased at a heavy price, was not without value. It focussed attention upon the real problem which confronted the Italian people—the need for the expulsion of the foreigner. It imprinted upon the heart of every Italian the supreme lesson that all efforts were unavailing, unless directed first and foremost towards the overthrow of Austrian domination. Upon the consummation of this design all parties in Italy were now agreed. No argument, indeed, was needed to convince the nationalists that Italy could never achieve an independent existence, or work out her national destiny untrammelled, whilst she still remained under the Habsburg yoke. But the constitutionalists equally recognized that the principles of their faith, 'Liberty, Equality and Humanity,' would continue to bear barren fruit so long as the hand of Metternich choked all the seeds of Liberalism. The pettiest Italian tyrant, as the events of 1821 and 1830 had demonstrated, was omnipotent against his subjects, when backed by the resources of the Austrian Empire; and since Austria was committed irrevocably to the doctrine of 'Legitimacy,' her forces were always at the disposal of every ruler, irrespective of the merits of the dispute. "The political order of things established in 1815," said Metternich, "has made Austria the natural warder and protector of public peace in Italy." [1] Accordingly, he set himself with sleepless vigilance to resist all innovations in government from the conviction that the wheels of revolution, once put in motion, would travel beyond the course intended by its authors. This was doubtless true, but it was a fundamental error not to recognize that progressive tendencies, when artificially checked, are only apt to produce more violent forms of change. Metternich's policy found signal expression in the secret clause of a treaty concluded in 1815 with Ferdinand I. of Naples: "It is agreed between the two high contracting parties that his majesty the King of the Two Sicilies, in restoring the Government of his Kingdom, will not admit any change that is not in accordance with the ancient institutions of the monarchy, and with the principles adopted by" the Austrian Emperor "for the internal administration of his Italian provinces."[1] The price of Austrian protection was thus Austrian tutelage. Hence to extirpate the grinding oppression of arbitrary and capricious despots, and to reap the golden harvest of a freer life, the first and indispensable step was to drive the foreigner from Italian soil.

---

[1] *Memoirs*, iii. 434.

1830–46 —

Italian schools of thought.

Unity of aim is not incompatible with diversity of opinion as to how the aim shall be accomplished. Austria was the common foe, and the overthrow of her ascendancy was placed in the foreground of all political programmes. But the efforts of Italian patriots were weakened by their failure to formulate a single line of action; they sought to mould the destinies of their country in different ways, and mutual distrust impeded their cordial co-operation. In the main, we can distinguish three schools of thought: the republicans, the federalists, and the adherents of the House of Savoy.

(1) *Mazzini.*

The republicans were followers of Giuseppe Mazzini, the prophet of the Italian movement. Exiled in 1831 for alleged conspiracy he proceeded to establish the society of 'Young Italy,' for in the youth of Italy he looked to find the salvation of his country. "Place youth at the head of the insurgent multitude," he counselled, "you know not the secret of the power hidden in these youthful hearts, nor the magic influence exercised on the masses by the voice of youth. You will find among the young a host of apostles of the new religion." He gathered round him a multitude of ardent spirits, inflamed with patriotic fervour, and willing to endure the severest hardships in the faith that "ideas grow quickly when watered with the blood of martyrs." In the pursuit of their mission the disciples of Mazzini were told to "climb the mountains and share the humble food of the labourer; to visit the workshops and the artisans, hitherto neglected; to speak to them of their rights, of their memories of the past, of their past glories, of their former commerce; to recount to them the endless oppression

---

[1] C. Segrè, "Italy" in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* x. 110.

1830-46 of which they were ignorant because no one took it on himself to reveal it."[1] It is the peculiar merit of Mazzini that, more than any other man, he grasped the vision of a United Italy, and set himself with all the ardour of one who preaches a new religion to make his countrymen share in that vision. "Italy," he wrote, "wills to be a nation; and one she must become, happen as it may. As certain as I am writing these words, this age will not pass away ere the protocols of the Treaty of Vienna shall have served for wadding—*perhaps on the march to Vienna itself*—for the muskets of our Italian soldiery."[2] Mazzini's task was to educate the Italian nation to realize that it was a nation and not a 'geographical expression,' to drive home the conviction that the whole Peninsula, though divided by artificial political barriers, was a living unity with a common heritage of traditions and historic memories. His appeal was addressed to "men speaking the same language, treading the same earth, cradled in their infancy with the same maternal songs, strengthened in their youth by the same sun, inspired by the same memories, the same sources of literary genius."[3] The *Carbonari* had served a useful purpose in keeping alive the spirit of patriotism, but their lack of organizing capacity was a fatal flaw in their movement. "From the want of known leaders," wrote Metternich, "and of concerted action among themselves, the sects [secret societies] are not nearly so dangerous as we might fear." Their strength was frittered away in local outbreaks, which were powerless to achieve anything but a temporary success. So long as unity of action was divorced from unity of purpose, failure was a foregone conclusion; so long as the revolutionaries relied upon isolated efforts, they were bound to meet with disaster. One part of Italy must fight shoulder to shoulder with another if victory was to be assured; in 1821 Piedmont did not rise until the Neapolitans had been practically crushed, and in 1830 the revolts were sporadic and ill-designed. The futility of this narrow policy may well seem obvious to us in the light of

---

[1] C. Segrè, *op. cit.* 121-122.

[2] Mazzini, *op. cit.* 115.

[3] *Ibid.* 51.

E. Brogi.

MAZZINI (1805-1872)

history, but it needed a succession of failures to impress it upon the minds of the people; and without the teaching of Mazzini the lesson might never have been learnt at all. In any case, Mazzini merits all the honour due to a pioneer whose life was devoted to the pursuit of a great ideal. His propaganda broadened the political horizon of Italians and created a vigorous public opinion in favour of national independence; hence amongst the makers of modern Italy he holds an imperishable place.

(2) *The House of Savoy.*

But while Mazzini gave to the Italian world the ideal of a United Italy, it was reserved for other men to translate his ideal from theory into fact. Mazzini was a republican; the new State was to be built upon democratic foundations. The spontaneous rising of the whole people to throw off the yoke of foreign oppression would emancipate them at the same time from their bondage to monarchical rule. This part of Mazzini's dream, however, remained unfulfilled. Practical men preferred to pin their faith to the House of Savoy, and the efficacy of organized force. Italian opinion turned to Piedmont, because alone among Italian States she possessed an army of sufficient pretensions to cope with Austria in the field, and her claims to leadership in the coming struggle could also be defended on other grounds, more especially her comparative immunity from any foreign intermixture. As early as 1817 Metternich remarked that "the Turin Cabinet entertains ambitious views which can only be gratified at the expense of Austria."[1] Piedmont was now ruled by Charles Albert, who had come to the throne in 1831. Allusion has already been made to his equivocal conduct during the revolt of 1821, and another insurrection, a dozen years later, was repressed by him with excessive severity. But events were to prove the truth of his assertion that "to my dying day the words 'Patriotism' and 'Freedom from Foreign Rule' will cause my heart to throb." "When the opportunity occurs," he declared, "my life, my sons' lives, my arms, treasure and all, will be expended for the cause of Italy." Meanwhile the wisdom of his administration encouraged the hopes of those who saw in

---

[1] *Memoirs*, iii. 98.

1846 the House of Savoy the salvation of Italy. "We shall march," he said, "with the times"; and a number of salutary reforms were set on foot, designed to transform Piedmont into a modern State, and to prepare her for the work of national reconstruction.

(3) *The Federalists.* For the moment, however, a section of Italian patriots were attracted by the glamour of Gioberti's proposals in his famous *Primato*; and, extravagant though they seemed, they were destined to exercise a remarkable influence upon the shaping of events. His scheme had at least the merit of originality, for at its inception it was without parallel among the multitude of ideas with which the political situation was flooding contemporary literature. It was nothing less than to constitute the Pope head of an Italian league composed of the different States associated together in a Federation. For centuries the temporal power of the Papacy had been regarded as the main obstacle to the resuscitation of Italy; it was now designed as the basis upon which a united and regenerated Italy should be built up. A reformed Papacy, raised from its degradation, was to resume under altered conditions its former duel with the Empire, and to fulfil once more its historic rôle of championing the interests of Italy against foreign intruders.

The Liberal Pope. Of all the solutions of the Italian Question, that of the Federalists and Neo-Guelphs appeared in the light of history the most remote. Yet the strange irony of events decreed that it should be afforded the first chance of fulfilment. In 1846 Pius IX. ascended the papal throne, and from this moment dates the dawn of Italian liberation, the beginning of the revolution which was ultimately to end in the expulsion of the foreigner and the unification of the Peninsula. After wandering thirty years in a wilderness of disappointed hopes, the Italian people had at last approached the threshold of the Promised Land, and the political structure established at the Vienna Congress forthwith began to crumble to the dust. The new Pope was believed to be anti-Austrian and a Liberal; he had studied the writings of Gioberti, which seem to have exercised the same influence over him as Bolingbroke's *Patriot King* over George III. Accordingly, his accession was greeted with boundless enthusiasm, a token of the yearning with which Italy awaited the coming of a leader. His first step appeared to justify the expectations which his election had aroused: he proclaimed an Amnesty for all political offenders. Whether intentionally or not, this act amounted to a virtual defiance of Austria; it meant that in the eyes of the Church patriotism was no longer stigmatized as a crime. "We were prepared for everything," confessed Metternich, "except for a Liberal Pope; now we have got one, there is no answering for anything." The Amnesty was followed by other measures, such as the institution of a Council of State, the membership of which was thrown open to laymen, the establishment of a municipality in Rome, and the formation of a civic guard These spontaneous reforms on the part of the most conservative Government in Italy were interpreted throughout the Peninsula as a call to arms. The Sicilians were the first to move; they rose in revolt, and within less than a month had reduced the whole island except Messina. A constitutional Government was set up, and the galling chains of Bourbon despotism were discarded. Alarmed for the safety of his mainland kingdom, Ferdinand II. hastened to forestall a revolutionary movement in Naples by granting a Constitution. In this way he also thought to punish the Pope for his patronage of the Liberal movement, since the whole Italian people would now raise the cry for a constitutional system of Government. This expectation was speedily fulfilled. The Pope was compelled to follow Ferdinand's example and proclaim a Constitution, while the precedent which Naples had set was also imitated by Leopold of Tuscany. Charles Albert, recognizing the importance of enlisting Liberal sympathy in the struggle which seemed imminent, issued an edict giving to Piedmont the Constitution which was one day to serve as the basis of the new Italian State. At the same time events in Austria deepened the conviction that the hour of Italian emancipation was at hand. Vienna, the very citadel of Metternich's power, had revolted against his system of government, and in an instant the minister had fallen. The Habsburg Empire, 1848 — stripped of all its pretensions, appeared after all but a house of cards which would go to pieces at the first touch of organized resistance. With the confidence born of this belief, the Italian provinces of Austria promptly seized the occasion to make common cause with the neighbouring States in a general movement to achieve national independence. Milan in the *Cinque Giornate* (the Five Glorious Days) compelled the Austrian forces under Radetzky to evacuate the city. Venice immediately followed suit, driving out the garrison and proclaiming the Republic of St. Mark.

The war of 1848. Everything now turned upon the course of action which the King of Piedmont would resolve to pursue. Cavour gave utterance to the famous exhortation: "The hour of fate has struck for the Sardinian monarchy. One road only is open, that of immediate war." Hitherto Charles Albert, a devout son of the Church, had been reluctant on religious grounds to draw the sword against a great Catholic Power. But in 1847 Austria, taking up the gage thrown down to her by the reforming party, had occupied Ferrara despite the Pope's protests. This blunder, for it proved to be no less, gave Charles Albert an opportunity to pose as defender of the Church, and to invest a war for the sacred rights of nationality with the character of a crusade for the sacred rights of religion. Accordingly he now accepted the invitation of Milan to intervene on its behalf, and taking the field against Austria, he assumed responsibility for the conduct of the war. All Italy flocked to his banners, for no State dared to withstand the popular enthusiasm. The Pope, the Duke of Tuscany, even Naples, were all forced to join in the struggle. The Piedmontese won the victory of Goito over the Austrian general Radetzky, but they failed to pursue their advantage and allowed the enemy to retake Vicenza, Padua, and other places in Venetia, until Venice alone remained. This supineness was the more inexplicable since Radetzky had been fighting with inferior forces, and a vigorous offensive would have cut him off from his communications and prevented the arrival of reinforcements. It proved disastrous not only in a military, but in a political sense, for it furnished an opportunity to the Italian Governments to withdraw from a cause which they had only embraced with reluctance. The counsels of Pius IX. had long been distracted by his conflicting obligations as an Italian ruler, pledged to co-operate in the expulsion of the foreigner, and as a Catholic pontiff, of whose spiritual dominion the Austrian monarchy was the main prop. It was impossible to reconcile interests so divergent, and Pius decided to sacrifice his interests as a secular prince. In the famous Encyclical of April 1848 he declared to the world that war with Austria was "wholly abhorrent from the counsels" of a Pope. This announcement was significant in more ways than one; primarily it meant that the dream which had inspired Gioberti's *Primato* had collapsed. The plan of a Federation was definitely set aside, for the leadership of the Italian cause could never be entrusted to a Government which had shirked its responsibilities at a conjuncture so favourable to a fortunate issue. The immediate result was to encourage the King of Naples to overthrow the Constitution of the southern kingdom and recall his forces from the front. 1848 —

Course of the war.

The defection of her allies left Piedmont to carry on the struggle with Austria single-handed; but the situation might still have been retrieved, if Charles Albert had thrown off his irresolution and displayed the energy which the conduct of a military campaign demanded. Undeterred by the papal Allocution, the States of Central and Northern Italy—Venetia, Parma, Piacenza, and Modena—passed a series of plebiscites in favour of their incorporation with the kingdom of Piedmont; while the Sicilians also offered their crown to the second son of the Sardinian King. But within a short time the King suffered a severe defeat at Custozza; and, after the capitulation of Milan, was forced to conclude the Salasco Armistice which restored to Austria her territorial possessions in Upper Italy, although Venice continued to hold out in her resistance.

Its collapse.

The movement which had opened so auspiciously for the redemption of Italy was now upon the verge of complete disaster. Austria, though crippled by internal weakness, had shown unexpected powers of resistance, and the tenacity

1849 — of her generals had snatched victory from the very mouth of defeat. Moreover, the failure of Charles Albert to establish the kingdom of Upper Italy, an ambition which he had long cherished, discredited the cause of monarchy, and was the immediate occasion for democratic outbreaks. The revolutionary elements in Rome proclaimed a republic of which Mazzini became the virtual head—the Pope passing into exile; and a provisional Government was also set up in Tuscany. Events hastened to the final consummation which was to mark the end of the first—and most disastrous—phase of the Italian War of Independence. Piedmont suddenly terminated the truce with Austria and recklessly plunged once more into war; within eleven days after the rupture of the armistice, the issue was decided on the field of Novara in Austria's favour. Charles Albert, worn out by his struggles, and to enable Piedmont to obtain better conditions in the peace negotiations, abdicated his throne in favour of his son Victor Emmanuel II., and departed into exile; thus sealing with his martyrdom his devotion to the Italian cause. The triumph of reaction reached its culminating point when France intervened on behalf of the Pope, and in spite of Garibaldi's gallant efforts overthrew the Roman Republic, and when simultaneously the Duke of Tuscany was restored to his duchy and the heroic resistance of Venice was finally overborne.

Cavour.

Italy, once more a geographical expression, relapsed into her former condition. A heavy price was exacted for the efforts she had made to shake off the Austrian yoke. The retrogrades, making fear the buttress of their power, inaugurated a reign of terror and indulged in an orgy of excesses which awakened the moral indignation of all Europe. The Italian princes had been tried, and with one exception they had been found wanting. The exception was Piedmont, and the misfortunes of Charles Albert were not endured in vain since they evinced to the sincerity of the House of Savoy and linked its fortunes indissolubly with the future development of Italy. Meanwhile the happy destiny of Piedmont was raising up for her a great statesman in the person of Cavour, whose life-work constitutes

COUNT CAVOUR (1810-1861).

the history of the Italian War of Liberation in its second phase. Cavour came to the head of the Government in 1852, and with one short interval of a few months enjoyed a tenure of power which lasted eight years. His achievements in the domestic sphere merit some notice, for they not only served to rally round the Minister the important body of Liberal opinion, but they laid the foundations of an organized and consolidated State—the necessary prelude to an efficient foreign policy. Cavour reformed the finances, developed the railway system, lowered commercial tariffs, adopted an enlightened social and agrarian policy, and improved the military defences. He recognized, in fact, that the only sound basis for a vigorous policy abroad is a contented and prosperous population at home, and the wisdom of his economic administration was rewarded by the loyalty with which the nation supported all his foreign undertakings. 1852 —

Cavour's aims and methods.

From the first moment of office Cavour set before himself the supreme task of resuming the heroic struggle with Austria, temporarily interrupted by the catastrophe which had befallen Charles Albert. How well he accomplished his task is written imperishably in the history of the modern Italian kingdom, whose strength to-day is the best testimony to the enduring value of his work. With the vision and judgment of a true statesman Cavour grasped the vital condition of success—the isolation of Austria. Piedmont was too weak to cope single-handed with the Central Empire, and the European Powers looked askance at any violation of the Treaties of 1815. Without an ally Italian resistance would break to pieces beneath the diplomatic pressure which would certainly be brought to bear in order to maintain the *status quo*. It was necessary, therefore, to secure for Piedmont a sympathetic hearing in the councils of Europe, then to enlist the active co-operation of some great military Power, and finally to take up arms when Austria, goaded into war, should appear guilty of wanton aggression. The skill with which Cavour drew the net round Austria, and achieved all the points of this programme, was a masterpiece of diplomacy. His first step was taken when he inter-

1853–56 vened in 1853 on behalf of the political refugees from Lombardy and Venetia, whose property had been sequestrated by the Austrian Government. The intervention failed in its immediate object, but it was approved by England and France, and revealed Piedmont as the champion of oppressed Italians. The real turning-point, however, came in 1855 with the momentous decision of Cavour to participate in the Crimean War, a decision which enhanced the prestige of the Sardinian monarchy and gave it a claim upon the gratitude of its allies. At the same time it completed the isolation of Austria, which lost the friendship of Russia by her ingratitude,[1] and estranged the Western Powers by her vacillation. At the Congress of Paris (1856) Cavour denounced the evils of Austrian oppression in Italy, and his disclosures shamed Austria into moderating the harshness of her rule. But the day for conciliatory measures had passed beyond recall. Daniele Manin, the eminent patriot, voiced the general sentiment when he declared: "We do not want Austria to mend her ways in Italy; we want her to go."

Napoleon III. and Italy.

In England public opinion was deeply sympathetic towards the Italian nationalists, but her statesmen considered themselves still pledged to the Treaties of 1815, and could not be relied upon to lend material assistance. Cavour therefore turned to France, and in the Emperor he found the ally whose encouragement and military support were indispensable for the furtherance of his schemes. Napoleon III. was induced by a variety of motives to assume an active part in the Italian movement. He was sprung from an Italian house, and in his early days had fought in the ranks of Italian insurgents. Mingled with personal inclinations and an unfeigned interest in the Italian cause were his imperial ambitions. He was the inheritor of the Napoleonic traditions; and, as interpreted by a warm though unstable imagination, they seemed to invest him with the championship of all oppressed nationalities. Moreover, he had a strong hereditary reason for seeking to discredit the settlement of 1815, apart from the more ignoble motive of creating a general turmoil in order to fish in troubled waters. As early as 1855 he had given an inkling of his intentions by his famous question to Cavour: "What can be done for Italy?" Three years later the situation had matured sufficiently for the holding of a conference at Plombières, where Napoleon secretly met Cavour and promised his aid in return for the cession of Savoy to France. At this time Cavour's calculations apparently did not travel beyond the expansion of Piedmont into the kingdom of Upper Italy by the absorption of the provinces wrested from Austria. He did not yet contemplate the formation of a United Italy, for the Pope was to remain undisturbed in Rome, while the Bourbon dynasty was to retain possession of Naples. Six months afterwards the secret engagement, into which Napoleon had been induced to enter, became transparent to the whole world. The Emperor himself revealed it in addressing the Austrian ambassador with the words: "I regret that our relations are not as satisfactory as formerly." This utterance created a profound impression, which was deepened by the speech of Victor Emmanuel at the opening of his Parliament a few days later: "With all our respect for treaties," ran the memorable words of the King, "we are not insensible to the cry of pain which rises towards us from so many parts of Italy." It was impossible to mistake the significance of this warning; thousands of volunteers poured into Piedmont, and the hopes of Italian patriots mounted high as they waited for the moment when the banner of Piedmont would again be unfurled in the cause of Italy.

---

[1] See p. 150.

1858
—

War with Austria.

Events were now marching rapidly, and it was the policy of Cavour to hasten the crisis. He held in his hands all the diplomatic threads, but at any moment they might snap. The great statesman had accurately gauged the mercurial temperament of Napoleon, whose varying moods changed with every hour, and he also knew that the Emperor's native irresolution was being reinforced by the difficulties of the internal situation in France—the opposition of the Clericals. Moreover, as the chancelleries of Europe were swift to recognize, there lurked all the danger of a universal conflagration in a French advance upon Italy; and they had proposed

1859 — a Congress of the Powers as the best means of preserving peace. But a Congress was the last thing that Cavour wanted, for it meant the shipwreck of all his hopes. The experience of half a century had shown that Congresses were more concerned to devise checks and balances than to satisfy whole-heartedly the claims of nationality. The situation was thus extremely critical when Austria, whose diplomacy was immeasurably inferior to that of her astute and resourceful adversary, played into Cavour's hands. It was obviously her policy to wait in patience while the alliance between Piedmont and France inevitably went to pieces under the weight of European disapproval. Indeed Piedmont, overborne by the tyranny of circumstances, was actually on the point of disarmament when the war party in Austria carried the day, and sent her an ultimatum. "The die is cast," cried Cavour in an outburst of joy, "and we have made history." In the face of overwhelming difficulties he had achieved the end for which he had so long laboured. Austria had committed the folly of declaring war at the very time when the Powers were working for peace, and so had afforded Piedmont an adequate pretext for taking up the challenge thrown down to her.

Napoleon's defection. The war opened with the Austrian invasion of Piedmont (April 1859). Victor Emmanuel and Napoleon took the field at the head of their forces, and a rapid succession of victories culminating in the battle of Solferino attended their arms. But misfortunes still continued to mar the destiny of Italy, for the moment she was about to drain her cup of triumph it was again dashed from her lips. At the height of success, when the destruction of Austria seemed assured, Napoleon drew back, and in return for the surrender of Lombardy to Piedmont concluded peace at Villafranca (July 1859). His action has been severely criticized, and the bitter grief of Cavour, who was completely stunned by the wreck of his well-laid plans, shows that it came as a complete surprise. Yet in truth nothing less might have been expected from the impressionable character of Napoleon III., who was accessible to every conflicting emotion and swayed by every passing breeze. It must be confessed also

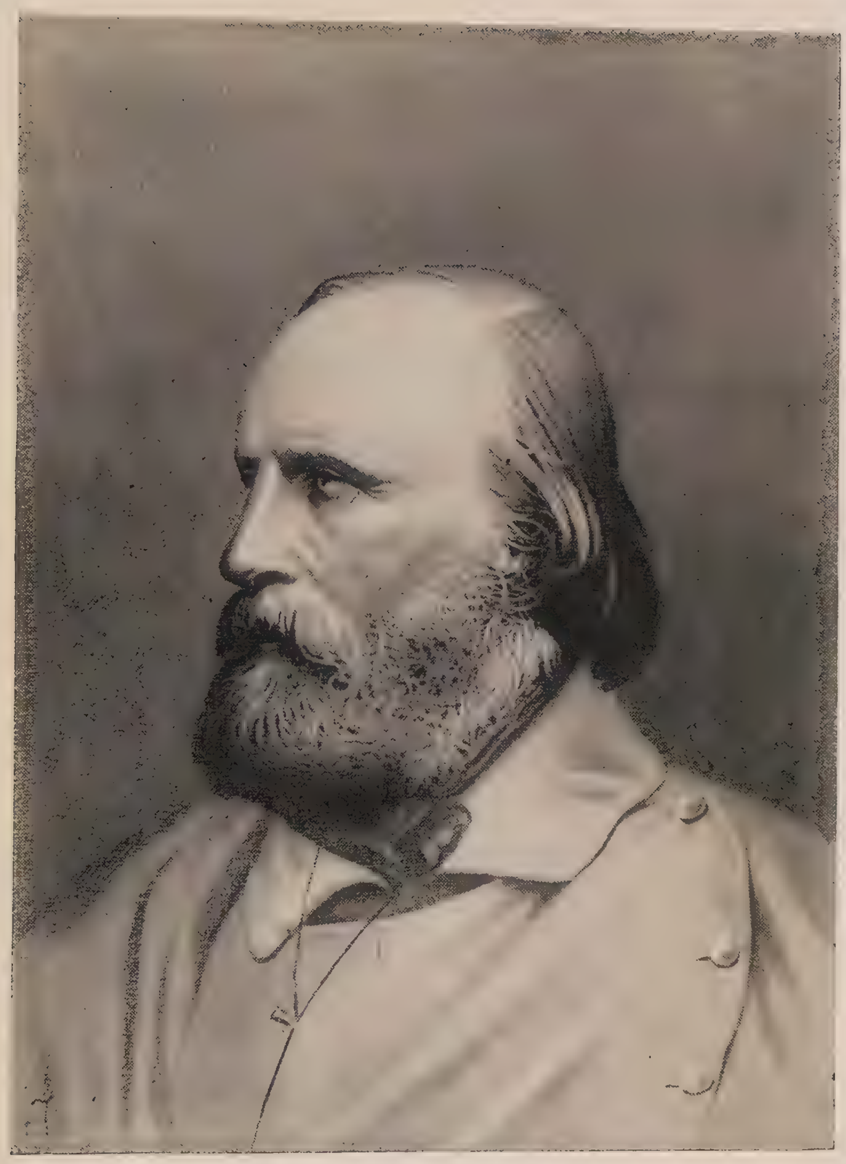
1859 — that the difficulties of his position placed him in an emergency full of imminent peril. Prussia showed marked uneasiness lest his victories should tempt the Emperor to extend the frontier of France towards the Rhine, and so fulfil the ambition which the French people had never ceased to cherish ; and she had already seized the pretext to arm in defence. Moreover Napoleon was not a little disconcerted by the lightning-like rapidity with which Austrian resistance was collapsing ; he felt that the control of the situation was slipping from his grasp, and that events would shape themselves without reference to his own particular interests. Nor were his misgivings entirely unwarranted. He had planned the settlement of the Italian Question on lines which would satisfy the legitimate ambitions of the Sardinian monarchy in the north, while maintaining the *status quo* in central and southern Italy. He had never contemplated the political unity of the whole Peninsula—a development fraught with menace to his own military power and involving the grave risk of a collision with the French Clericals, who would be infuriated at the threatened extinction of the papal dominion. Yet in the direction of a United Italy, as risings in Tuscany and the States of the Church showed, the current was flowing with irresistible force.

The plebiscites.

Cavour resigned office and his work seemed hopelessly compromised. But at this crisis in their fate the Italian people took their destiny into their own hands, recognizing that a nation must learn to lean upon itself. French assistance had been invaluable, but the completion of the task which others had begun could only be accomplished by the Italians themselves. Central Italy boldly refused to accept the decision that the rulers of Parma, Tuscany, Modena and the Romagna—who had been expelled during the Austrian debacle—should be restored. In the hour of darkness its indomitable resolution opened up a new vista. Out of compunction, perhaps, for his equivocal policy in the war, Napoleon would allow no coercion on the part of Austria, and accepted England's proposal for a plebiscite. An overwhelming vote declared in favour of union with the Sardinian monarchy, but as the price of their annexation the Emperor

1860 — extorted the surrender of Savoy and Nice. His reluctance to permit the incorporation of the Central States with Piedmont had only been overcome with difficulty, as he realized the impossibility of checking any longer forces which he himself had set in motion. The acquisition of Italian territory was intended to reconcile French public opinion, but it completed the alienation of Italy, and it obscured the great services which Napoleon, despite his tortuous policy, had rendered to the Italian cause.

Garibaldi. The eyes of the Italian world were now fixed upon Sicily, where an astonishing panorama was unfolding itself before their gaze. In some respects the 'Garibaldian epic' was the most striking, as it certainly was the most dramatic, episode of the Italian movement. After tasting to the full the bitter waters of diplomacy, Italy witnessed a succession of heroic achievements which recalled the age of mediæval romances rather than one of sober historical facts. The effete Bourbon monarchy had long been tottering to its fall, and its final dissolution was brought about by the Sicilian Revolution. The movement was organized by the followers of Mazzini, but a new direction was given to its course when Garibaldi, an adherent of the Savoy dynasty, assumed the leadership. At the head of his 'Thousand' he landed at Marsala on May 11, 1860, and from that day onwards his march was one triumphal progress. Within a month the 'red-shirts' had forced the retirement of the Neapolitan garrison, over 20,000 in number, from the island; they then crossed the Straits of Messina, and on September 7 took up their headquarters at Naples, which the Bourbon King had already evacuated. Meanwhile Cavour, who had returned to power, watched Garibaldi's precipitate advance not without embarrassment. He recognized the danger that the Mazzinians, whose influence was not propitious for the fortunes of the Sardinian monarchy, might gain the upper hand among the population of the south. Even more imminent was the danger of an international crisis, which could hardly be averted if Garibaldi fulfilled his intention of marching on Rome in order to make her the capital of Italy. Garibaldi did not trouble his head about diplomatic compli-



GIUSEPPE GARIBALDI (1807-1882).

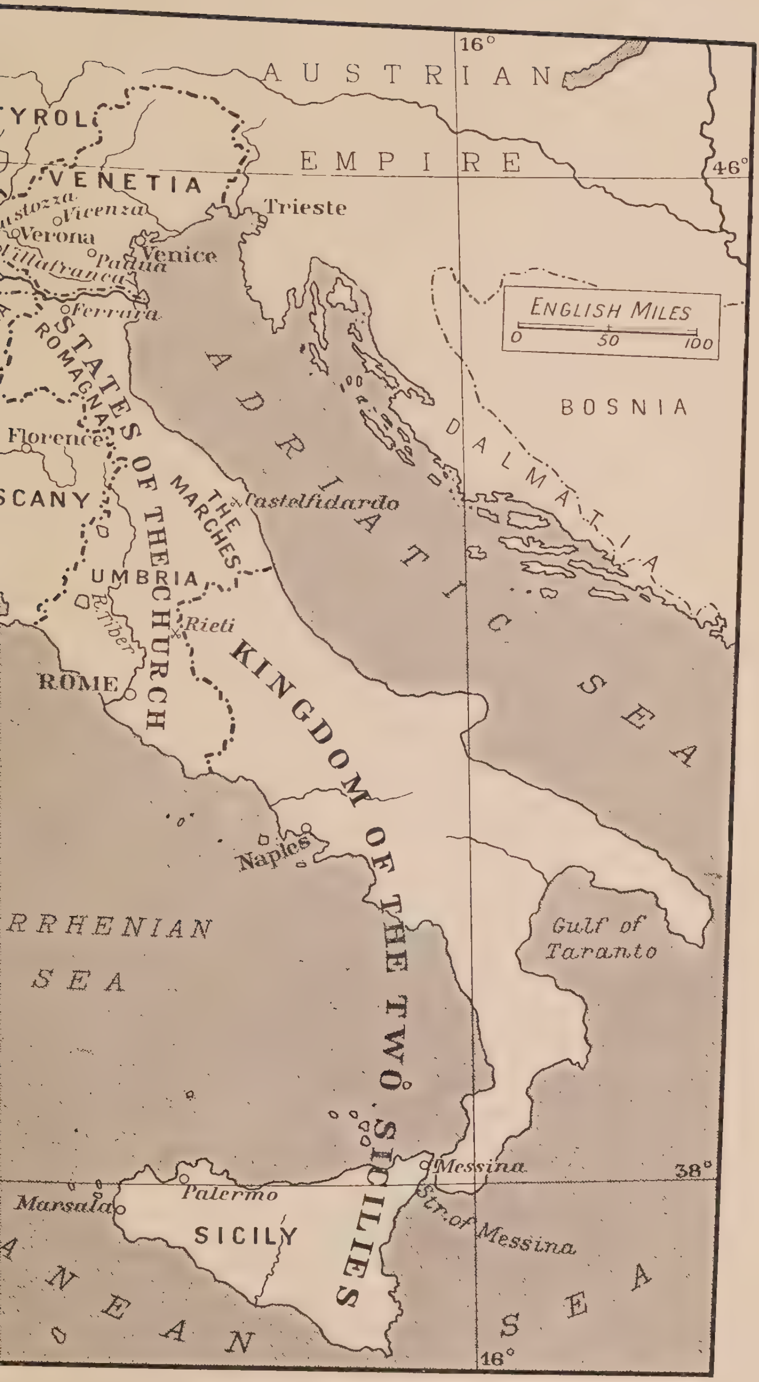
From a copyright Portrait in the possession of Lord Redesdale.

By the courtesy of Messrs. Hutchinson & Co.

cations, and cared little whether an attack on the French garrison in Rome provoked France into a declaration of war. But Cavour, who knew that the enemies of Italy were only waiting for an opportunity to swoop down upon her at the first false move, could not view the prospect of a European conflagration so lightly. His skill saved a perilous situation; to forestall Garibaldi, he despatched an army into the Papal States. He had no difficulty in finding the necessary pretext to cover his action. From Ireland, Belgium and France the Papal Court had summoned a multitude of volunteers to check by force of arms the deluge which was threatening to sweep away the last remnants of its temporal power. A great campaign was inaugurated which had for its immediate object the protection of the patrimony of St. Peter, while it also foreshadowed the rehabilitation of the principle of 'Legitimacy.' Yet any reversion to 'Legitimist' pretensions—in other words, the restoration of exiled rulers—would have been fatal to the existing order in Italy and France alike; it was, therefore, to the interest of both Cavour and Napoleon to stop the progress of the movement before Austria was drawn into it. Accordingly, the Italian Government called upon the Roman Curia to disband its foreign troops, and upon its refusal declared war. Within two weeks all was over; the papal forces were routed at Castelfidardo, and the States of the Church passed out of the possession of the Pope. The victory was a personal triumph for Cavour; he had emerged successfully from a critical ordeal, and his hands were enormously strengthened for coping with the situation in Naples. It was true that in baulking the plans of Garibaldi he had intensified the dislike and suspicion with which the soldier regarded the statesman, but he was well aware that Garibaldi needed his assistance to reduce the Neapolitan fortresses; moreover the Italian Parliament supported the minister. The time was therefore ripe for Victor Emmanuel to cross the Neapolitan frontier; and, at his meeting with Garibaldi, the latter surrendered his authority into the hands of the King of Italy. This act of renunciation, accompanied by a refusal to accept the honours pressed upon him, 1860–70 was a fitting end to the heroic achievements of the great Italian hero.

Italy of the Italians.

The political unity of Italy was now almost achieved. Plebiscites were held in Naples and Sicily, and in both cases a decisive vote was cast in favour of annexation; a little later they were supplemented by similar votes in the States of the Church (Umbria and the Marches). Rome and Venice alone were needed as the coping stone of the edifice. Venice was acquired in 1866, when the outbreak of the Austro-Prussian War furnished Italy with an opportunity to strike a blow at her traditional enemy. Rome came into Italian possession in 1870, when the Franco-Prussian War compelled the retirement of the French garrison. This completion of his life-work Cavour did not live to see, for he died in June 1861. But he lived long enough to create the *Italy of the Italians*, and to earn the undying gratitude of the Italian people.



ITALY IN 1815

CHAPTER VI

THE BALKAN STATES

1815 — *Decline of the Ottoman Empire.*

THE rise of the Balkan States is the history of the decline of the Ottoman Empire. This decline has been very gradual. In the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries Turkey owed her survival, not to her own inherent strength, but to the weaknesses and jealousies of her neighbours. She found her salvation in the rivalry of Austria and Russia on the Lower Danube, and in the Mediterranean interests of Great Britain. The 'Sick Man of Europe' clung tenaciously to life, and the prognostications of his speedy dissolution were doomed to disappointment. It is, of course, obvious that recent developments have brought new factors into play, and have given an entirely different aspect to the whole Eastern Question. But any serious attempt to unravel the tangled web of Balkan diplomacy in the nineteenth century must deal with the problem from the standpoint of the nineteenth, not of the twentieth century.

Phases of the Eastern Question.

The Eastern Question has always been an international Question. In one form or another it has furnished the background of European politics for twelve centuries. As early as the eighth century Europe was almost submerged by a wave of Mohammedan conquest; and, though the tide rolled back, its menace was always present. A thousand years later the Eastern Question was still acute, but its character had fundamentally changed. European statesmen no longer feared the expansion of the Ottoman Empire; what they now dreaded was its disruption. Austria abandoned her historic rôle as the bulwark of Europe against Turkey, in order to become the bulwark of Turkey against Russia.

1815 — The trend of Russia southwards to the shores of the Bosphorus, the traditional policy of expansion inaugurated by Peter the Great and culminating under Catharine, converted Austria into a rival and an enemy. In the eyes of Austria, Russian ascendancy in the Balkans foreshadowed a great Slav Empire, which would one day absorb all the Slavs of South-Eastern Europe. Hence the integrity of the Habsburg monarchy seemed bound up with the integrity of the Turkish dominions. Great Britain also believed that the continued existence of Turkey in Europe as a barrier against Russia was necessary to safeguard her empire in India and her position in the Mediterranean. She had already intervened in 1790 to prevent the partition of Ottoman territory by Joseph II. and Catharine the Great; and she intervened a second time in the Crimean War when the dissolution of Turkey again appeared imminent. Yet while the European Powers successfully warded off the perils which threatened Turkey from without, they could not prevent the foundations of the Ottoman Empire being slowly undermined by internal weaknesses. In the main the sources of these weaknesses were twofold. One was the ambition of the pashas, or provincial governors, who were practically free from control and independent in all but name. A degenerate line of sultans held nominal sway, but as a rule they were deficient in resolution and capacity; and their incompetence served to accelerate the process of decay. Two powerful pashas in the early years of the nineteenth century were Ali of Janina and Mehemet Ali, the former building up a great power in Albania, the latter in Egypt. But the fundamental causes of the gradual shrinkage of the Ottoman Empire were racial and religious. Built up by the sword, Turkish dominion was maintained only by the sword. No ties of common sentiment or common religion knit together conquerors and conquered, and the Turks always remained isolated in the midst of a subjected population. An impenetrable barrier rigidly divided the faithful and the unbeliever, the Mussulmans and the Orthodox, mutual hatred fanning the flames of religious discord and racial antipathy. As the spirit of revolt spread among the Balkan races, the

Internal condition of Turkey.

Eastern Question passed out of the control of diplomatists, and the despised peasant of the Balkans asserted his manhood before the eyes of the whole world.

The condition of the Greeks.

The Greeks were the first to achieve their emancipation. Two circumstances fostered the longing for independence, which had found expression in a rising in the Morea as early as 1774. In the first place, the Turks usually displayed great moderation in their treatment of the Greek population. "In their village communities, which the Turks had suffered to survive, the Greeks had the elements of the vigorous local life which suited their genius; in the Orthodox Church they possessed the organization necessary to bind them together in the sense of a common nationality. Long before the outbreak of the insurrection the wealthy island communities of the Ægean and the Adriatic, though nominally forming part of the Ottoman Empire, had enjoyed a practical independence, tempered only by the obligation to send to Constantinople an annual tribute in money and in sailors to man the imperial navy. Their armed trading-brigs . . . were destined to play a decisive part in the struggle for independence. In the Morea and on the mainland there was indeed no such practical autonomy as in the islands; but here too the weakness of the administration had suffered a spirit of independence to grow up which asserted itself in the only way open to it—brigandage."[1] It is only fair to remember also that the tolerance of the Turks set an example to Europe which was sorely needed. The Christian was allowed "a greater measure of liberty than that enjoyed by dissidents in any other country in Europe. Catholics in Ireland and Protestants in Austria might envy him his privileges. He was free to exercise his religion, to educate himself as he pleased, to accumulate wealth; however humble his origin, in a system which accounted nothing of birth, he could hold high office in the Government." The importance of the Greek Church, both in keeping alive the spirit of hostility to the followers of Mahomet and in providing the framework of an organized resistance, can scarcely

---

[1] W. A. Phillips, "Greece," in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* x. 170, 172. Phillips, *The War of Greek Independence* (1897), chap. i.

1821 — be over-estimated. Thus the Turks themselves by their tolerance made possible the national movement which was to lead to the dissolution of their power in Greece. In the second place, the revived study of Greek classics brought home to the modern Greeks the great traditions of which circumstances had made them the depositaries. As in Hungary, so in Greece, a linguistic and literary revival associated with the name of Korais heralded a national uprising. On the other hand, the driving force behind the Greek revolution was not Hellenism, but the Orthodox religion; and the traditions of Hellenism were chiefly potent in their appeal to the sympathies of those whose minds were stored with classical culture. An English poet, who shared in the Greek insurrection, voiced the sentiments of his countrymen when he wrote:

"The isles of Greece! The isles of Greece!
Where burning Sappho loved and sung—
Where grew the arts of war and peace,
Where Delos rose and Phœbus sprung!
Eternal summer gilds them yet—
But all, except their sun, is set. . . .

"The mountains look on Marathon,
And Marathon looks on the sea;
And musing there an hour alone,
I dreamed that Greece might still be free;
For, standing on the Persian's grave,
I could not deem myself a slave."

The Greek insurrection.

The first rising of the Greeks broke out in 1821 in the North. The leader was Prince Alexander Ypsilanti, who seized the opportunity afforded by the war between the Sultan and Ali of Janina to set up the standard of revolt in the Principalities of Moldavia and Wallachia. He relied upon the support of Russia, but the Emperor Alexander was now under the influence of Metternich, who persuaded him not to lend assistance. The movement was easily suppressed, and Ypsilanti fled into Austria. Meanwhile, another insurrection was gaining ground in the Morea, whence it rapidly developed into a War of Independence. It differed from the revolt in the North because it was the work of an organized body, the *Hetairia Philike*, a widespread secret society, which—like the *Carbonari* of southern Italy—kept alive the sparks of patriotism. It was also a national movement—the uprising of a nation; whereas the rebellion of Ypsilanti met with no response from the Roumanian peasants of Moldavia and Wallachia, who had endured great oppression at the hands of their Greek masters. But while the soil had been prepared for a Greek revolution by the propaganda of the Hetairists, the insurrection in the Morea was spontaneous and unorganized. A series of sporadic outbreaks culminated in a general massacre of the entire Mussulman population, and the torch of revolt was then carried northwards beyond the Isthmus of Corinth, until the whole of Greece—including Thessaly and Macedonia—was caught up in a general conflagration. Unhappily, however, the Greeks sullied the cause of freedom by barbarous atrocities, and the War of Independence degenerated from the outset into a war of extermination.

Intervention of Mehemet Ali.

The struggle was protracted over a period of eight years (1821–1829), though the final decision was not reached till 1831. At first the Turks were heavily handicapped by the fact that they were fighting on two fronts. For many months their best troops were held up before the island fortress of Janina, where Ali maintained a stout resistance in the face of overwhelming forces. Moreover the Greeks had command of the sea owing to their superior seamanship, and this was a factor of enormous importance. "The Greeks," said Wellington, "have the superiority at sea; and those who have this superiority must be successful." But in 1824 came the turn of the wheel of fortune, and the Turks now began to gain the upper hand. The Porte summoned to its aid Mehemet Ali, the Pasha of Egypt, who was promised the pashaliks of Morea, Syria and Damascus as the price of his assistance against the Greek insurgents. It was the policy of the Sultan Mahmud to weaken the 'over-mighty subject,' but he was compelled by force of circumstances to undermine his own position by lavish

1821–22 — promises of future rewards. "A drowning man clings to a serpent," and at the moment the help of Mehemet Ali was indispensable if the authority of the Sultan was to be restored in his Greek dominions. The intervention of the Pasha of Egypt at once made itself felt. He possessed an army and fleet organized by French officers and engineers according to Western ideas, and by sea and by land their superiority was speedily asserted. The situation of the Greeks now became extremely critical. It was abundantly clear that they were powerless to save themselves by their own exertions; and the volunteers, like Byron, who flocked to their standard, were too few to prevail against the disciplined forces pitted against them. Nothing short of a European intervention could avert the utter collapse of the Greek revolution, but the obstacles in the way of concerted action revealed the fundamental difficulties inherent in the Eastern Question.

Attitude of Europe. At the first news of the Greek revolt Metternich exclaimed: "This affair must be looked upon as placed beyond the pale of civilization."[1] In the eyes of the Austrian statesman the Greeks were rebels against the lawful sovereignty of the Ottoman Government, and the principle of 'Legitimacy' was invoked to serve as a plea for non-intervention. With this view the Tsar of Russia was easily brought to concur. "The Emperor Alexander," Metternich proudly boasted, "has taken root in my school." Moreover, Alexander was averse from war. "I have no ambition," he is reported to have said, "my Empire is already too big for me—I am not blood-thirsty, every one knows it—and this war would not be to Russia's interest." On her side England adhered strictly to the theory of non-intervention. Castlereagh, and still more Canning, believed that it was the bounden duty of Great Britain to hold aloof from the internal concerns of other States, except where she was entitled to intervene in virtue of treaty-obligations. At the same time England and Austria, as we have already seen, regarded the integrity of the Turkish Empire in the light of a political axiom. They were shrewd enough to recognize

[1] *Memoirs*, iii. 525.

that the success of the Greek insurrection would be the beginning of the end, and they not unnaturally dreaded the international complications which would ensue once Turkey were to disappear from the map of Europe. Hence they bent all their energies to isolating the Greek revolt and preventing it from developing into a European conflagration. For a time this policy was successfully pursued. Public opinion, carried away by memories of 'the glory that was Greece,' was overwhelmingly in favour of a race which bore the name, even if it only partially inherited the blood, of the classical Greeks. It was not strong enough, however, to divert the Governments of Europe from the course which counsels of expediency and prudence alike seemed to dictate.

Position of Russia.

This was the situation during the early years of the struggle. Yet even at this stage it became increasingly difficult for the European Powers to refrain from interference. Russia, in particular, showed signs of restlessness. The Tsar, whatever his personal views, could not forget that he was the champion of the Orthodox Church, and therefore had a peculiar interest in a war which bore the character of an Orthodox crusade against the infidel. Moreover it was the traditional policy of Russia to advance southwards, and it seemed folly to let slip an opportunity which offered such inviting prospects. At the same time the actions of the Porte itself gave Russia a pretext for intervention. The Patriarch of Constantinople, the spiritual head of the Orthodox Church, was made to expiate with his blood the butchery of Mussulmans in the Morea. This crime was as inexcusable as those it was intended to avenge, and it provoked a great outburst of indignation among the Russian people. Other grievances were not lacking; in defiance of treaty-obligations Turkey retained her hold upon the Danubian Principalities, and she also seized Greek ships flying the Russian flag. This led to a rupture of diplomatic relations between Russia and Turkey, and the outbreak of war now seemed unavoidable. Both England and Austria, however, were anxious to avert hostilities, and urged the Sultan, who felt his dignity gravely compromised, to make concessions. The result was to preserve peace for the

1822–23 moment, until the situation was profoundly modified by two important events.

Canning's policy towards Greece.

The first of these events was the appointment of George Canning as Foreign Secretary (1822). The keynote of Canning's policy was expressed in the maxim: "Every nation for itself, and God for us all!" While he privately shared the pro-Hellenic sympathies of his countrymen, his public attitude towards the Eastern Question was shaped purely by national considerations. "You know my politics well enough," he wrote, "to know what I mean when I say that for *Europe* I shall be desirous now and then to read *England*."[1] He explained his meaning in these terms: "Intimately connected as we are with the system of Europe, it does not follow that we are therefore called upon to mix ourselves on every occasion, with a restless and meddling activity, in the concerns of the nations which surround us." He supported whole-heartedly the doctrine of non-intervention. "Our object in common with our allies," he said, "has been to maintain peace, aware that a new war, in whatever quarter it might be kindled, might presently involve all Europe in its flames"; while in the event of a war in the East, "*no human foresight could anticipate the issue.*" On this ground he withheld assistance from the Greeks, though he counselled the Porte to conciliate Russia by removing her grievances, and to treat the insurgents with greater moderation. But the rapid march of events soon forced Canning to realize that something more than a policy of Olympian detachment was needed to safeguard the interests of Great Britain; and on March 25, 1823, he recognized the Greeks as belligerents. "The recognition of the belligerent character of the Greeks," Canning explained, "was necessitated by the impossibility of treating as pirates a population of a million souls, and of bringing within the bounds of civilized war a contest which had been marked at the outset, on both sides, by disgusting barbarities."[2] It was impossible to call to account the Turkish Government, which had no control, for acts of piracy committed by the Greeks who were in command of the sea; the only alternative was to recognize the Greek provisional Government and hold it responsible for the actions of its fleet. This step on the part of England reacted profoundly on the whole international situation, and awakened lively apprehensions at the Courts of Vienna and Petrograd. They could no longer profess to treat the Greeks as rebels, "beyond the pale of civilization," now that Great Britain had entered into formal relations with them. They could no longer leave the Greek War of Independence to take its own course, indifferent whether the Greeks massacred the Turks or the Turks butchered the Greeks. Sooner or later they were bound to intervene, for the recognition of the Greeks as belligerents was interpreted as a sign that England was seeking to oust Austria and Russia from the credit of intervention. But while the necessity for concerted intervention was now reluctantly admitted, there was no agreement as to the character of the intervention. It was clearly out of question to assist the Turks; yet if they helped the Greeks they would set the seal of approval upon a revolutionary movement and undermine the whole fabric of 'Legitimacy.' Russia proposed the establishment of three semi-independent principalities, enjoying autonomy, but under Turkish suzerainty. Metternich objected to the scheme on the ground that the new Greek States would inevitably gravitate towards Russia, looking to the Muscovite State for protection against Ottoman encroachment. He therefore advanced the alternative proposal that Greece should be made a sovereign State. This in its turn was equally unacceptable to Russia, which recognized the danger that Greece might pursue an independent course and shake herself free from Russian tutelage. A deadlock was thus reached, in the midst of which the Emperor Alexander died (1825).

---

[1] Stapleton, *Canning and his Times*, 364-365.

[2] W. A. Phillips, *History of Europe*, 143.

Change in Russian policy.

As the accession of George Canning to office gave a new turn to English policy, so a change in Russian policy was produced by the accession of Nicholas I. to the throne of the Romanoffs. Alexander I. had subordinated the traditional policy of Russia to what he conceived to be the

1826-28 interests of Europe. Enamoured of the idea of a European Concert,[1] he was easily persuaded by Metternich not to act independently in the affairs of Turkey. His successor reverted to the policy of Peter the Great and Catharine; and Canning, alarmed lest Russia should declare war on the Porte on her own account, proposed the joint intervention of the two Powers. According to the 'Protocol of Petrograd' (1826), Greece was to be erected into a vassal State, and this suggestion was laid before the Ottoman Government. England thus abandoned her policy of non-intervention in order to forestall isolated intervention on the part of Russia. The Porte rejected the Protocol, and Canning was driven to employ force as the only way to prevent the defection of Russia from the principles embodied in the Protocol. The Protocol of Petrograd was therefore converted into the Treaty of London (1827), by which Great Britain, France and Russia undertook to establish Greece as an autonomous State under Turkish suzerainty, and to take the necessary steps to compel the Porte to acquiesce in this settlement.

The independence of Greece.

Austria and Prussia would not agree to the coercion of Turkey in favour of rebellious subjects, and refused their assent to the treaty. Metternich proffered his mediation at Constantinople, when matters were brought to a crisis by the battle of Navarino (October 20, 1827). The fleets of England and France, while attempting to enforce an armistice between the Turks and the Greeks—in accordance with the instructions of the home Governments—came to blows with the fleet of Mehemet Ali and destroyed it. The results of Navarino were momentous. The Sultan proclaimed a Holy War against the Christian Powers, and in particular repudiated the treaty into which he had recently entered with Russia (Treaty of Akkerman, 1826) respecting the Danubian Principalities and the navigation of the Straits. This afforded Russia a pretext for intervention in Turkey, against which it was now impossible for the Western Powers to raise any effective protest. Meanwhile, however, Wellington had become Prime Minister (1828).

---

[1] See Chapter VII.

He was inflexibly opposed to coercive measures against the Porte, clinging to the hope that the Ottoman Empire might still be preserved intact as a barrier against Russian ambitions in the Mediterranean. Russia therefore took action alone, and war was declared on Turkey (1828). But the outbreak of war forced Wellington's hands; if England stood aside from the struggle she would have no voice in the final settlement, or at any rate Greece, liberated by the arms of Russia, would become a dependency of Russia. Accordingly, he fell in with the suggestion of the French Government to despatch an expeditionary force to the Morea to drive out the army of Mehemet Ali. Before the arrival of the French, Codrington, the English admiral, had already secured the evacuation of the Morea by making a naval demonstration before Alexandria. The war was brought to an end by the bold strategy of the Russian commander, Diebitsch, who with barely 13,000 troops pressed on to Constantinople and extorted from the Turks the Treaty of Adrianople (1829). The Danubian Principalities, while remaining nominally under Ottoman suzerainty, became to all intents and purposes the appanage of the Russian Empire, and the rights of the Russian flag in the Bosphorus and the Dardanelles were reasserted The Greek Question was settled by the Powers. Russia would have been content with the erection of Greece into a vassal State, autonomous but tributary. This solution was not acceptable to the British Government, which shared the conviction of Austria that the creation of a tributary State would open the door to Russian intrigues in the Balkans and furnish the pretext for perpetual interference in the affairs of Turkey. Hence Wellington and Metternich, who had both strenuously upheld the preservation of the Ottoman Empire, were compelled by the force of circumstances to recognize Greece as a sovereign and independent State. The new State was placed under the protection of the three Powers—Great Britain, Russia, and France—to whose joint efforts the Greek nation owed its resurrection; and the crown was offered to Otho, second son of King Louis of Bavaria, who assumed the reins of government 1828–31

—

1833–97 — in the opening months of 1833. In this way the first serious breach was made in the integrity of the Ottoman Empire; and a precedent was established which cleared the ground for the rise of a group of Balkan States, whose relations with each other and with the Great Powers have completely revolutionized the whole political situation in the Near East.[1]

Roumania. Among the Balkan States the most considerable in size at the present day is Roumania, whose population now numbers seven million people. In addition there are three and a half million Roumanians in Hungary, and nearly one and a half millions in Bessarabia, a province of Russia. These constitute *Romania Irredenta*, the 'unredeemed' part of the Roumanian race still under alien rule. The significance of these figures will be readily grasped when it is borne in mind that the Magyars only number eight to nine millions, the Southern Slavs (Serbs, Croats and Slovenes) eleven millions, the Czechs and Slovaks about nine millions, the Bulgarians five to six millions, the Greeks less than seven millions, and the Albanians about one million. The trade of Roumania is almost as great as the combined trade of Serbia, Montenegro, Bulgaria and Greece; and her army comes next to those of the six Great Powers. Roumania has been called 'the Belgium of the East,' and the epithet bears testimony to her striking progress.[2]

Early history. The Roumanian State is scarcely more than fifty years old, but the history of the Roumanian people goes back over sixteen hundred years. In the second century A.D. Trajan settled Roman colonies on the Lower Danube (in

---

[1] Otho's reign lasted thirty years. The chief events were: (1) The Revolution of 1843, when the King was forced to grant a Constitution and dismiss his Bavarian advisers; and (2) the occupation of the Piræus by English and French troops during the Crimean War to prevent Greece making war on Turkey. Otho's unpopularity and lack of an heir led to his deposition in 1862. His successor was George I., second son of Christian IX. of Denmark, at whose accession the British Government ceded the Ionian Islands to Greece. After the Russo-Turkish War (*infra*, p. 208) Greece obtained Thessaly and part of Epirus (Arta). In 1897 disturbances in Crete provoked the Greco-Turkish War, in which Greece was defeated, and the intervention of the Powers alone saved her from loss of territory.

[2] R. W. Seton-Watson, *Roumania and the Great War* (1915), 2, 5, 6.

Dacia), which subsequently served as an outpost of the Empire against the assaults of barbarians from the North. Then comes a break in their history of a thousand years, after which they reappear once more in the thirteenth century, when they were now divided into two Principalities—Moldavia and Wallachia. At a later period these Principalities became part of the Ottoman Empire, but they continued to be governed by their own rulers. When Russia began to advance southwards against Turkey in the eighteenth century, the geographical situation of the two provinces condemned them to play the part of a shuttlecock between the Muscovite State on the one side and the Ottoman State on the other. The boundary between Russia and Turkey was the River Pruth, which also formed the northern frontier of Moldavia; hence, whenever Russia was at war with the Turks, her first step was always to occupy Moldavia and Wallachia. As a result of the famous treaty of Kutchuk-Kainardji (1774), Russia acquired the right of intervention in the Principalities, and in 1812 (Treaty of Bucharest) she received the eastern portion of Moldavia known as Bessarabia. Under the Treaty of Adrianople, as already mentioned,[1] the Principalities became protectorates of the Russian Empire. This was practically equivalent to annexation, and Russian influence was now in the ascendant. The position, in fact, was analogous to that in Poland before the final partition, when Russia was in virtual possession of the country; accordingly it speedily awakened the apprehensions of Austria. The Principalities command the banks of the Danube, and their acquisition would have enabled Russia to control the navigation of the most important river in Europe. Hence, at the Congress of Paris (1856),[2] Moldavia and Wallachia were converted into autonomous States under Ottoman suzerainty, and Russia was compelled to restore Bessarabia.

Union of the Principalities.

The next stage in the history of Roumania was the union of the two Principalities. A movement in favour of a single national State had been steadily growing, and it found a powerful, if not disinterested, advocate in the French

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 193.

[2] *Supra*, p. 38.

1856-66 — Emperor. Napoleon III. rendered greater services to the cause of nationality than is usually recognized, and Roumania at any rate owes her national existence to the exertions of a French ruler. The Treaty of Paris, which brought the Crimean War to an end, provided that a constituent assembly should be elected in each of the Principalities to lay before a European Commission its views upon the question of union. The elections were improperly conducted, Turkey and Austria bringing pressure to bear upon the inhabitants and even resorting to intimidation. Napoleon annulled the elections and took steps to secure a free expression of opinion. The constituent assemblies declared in favour of a united State, but the scheme was wrecked by the opposition of England and Austria. The former supported the authority of the Ottoman Government from fear of Russia, while the latter recognized the dangerous attraction which a national Roumanian State would have for her own Roumanian subjects in Transylvania. It was settled, therefore, that each Principality should elect its own prince and legislative assembly (1858). The Roumanians thereupon proceeded to nominate the same Prince (Alexander Couza) both in Moldavia and Wallachia, thus outwitting the Powers who had overlooked the possibility that the Principalities might hit upon the same choice. Austria, now on the brink of the Italian war,[1] was unable to interfere, and the two provinces became united under one ruler. In 1861 the Porte also agreed to the union of the two legislatures; and in a proclamation to his people the Prince could announce to the world that 'The Roumanian nation is founded.'

Prince Couza (1859–1866).

Prince Couza's tenure of power lasted only seven years (1859–1866). It was a period of internal reforms. Ecclesiastical property was sequestrated; two Roumanian Universities were founded; and the peasants were relieved from their more onerous feudal obligations. These measures excited the hostility of the Church and the landowners, and brought about Couza's compulsory abdication. His successor was Prince Charles of Hohenzollern-Sigmaringen, whom Bismarck had counselled to accept the proffered dignity. "Accept," he said; "it will at any rate be an agreeable souvenir for your old age." His reign covered nearly half a century (1866–1914), and during this long period Roumania became the chief military State in South-Eastern Europe. The efficiency of the Roumanian army was first revealed to the world in the Russo-Turkish War of 1877, when the Roumanians captured the famous Grivitsa redoubt, the strongest of all the fortifications of Plevna. Russia rewarded the services of her Roumanian ally by wresting from her Bessarabia, which had been restored to Moldavia after the Crimean War. This ingratitude estranged the Roumanian people, who still deeply resent their separation from their kinsfolk across the River Pruth, the "accursed stream," as it is called. One other result of the war was the formal recognition of Roumanian independence; and, in token of her new status, Roumania in 1881 was erected into a kingdom.

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 178.

1866–1914

Prince Charles (1866–1914).

Roumania has enjoyed one inestimable advantage over her neighbours in the Balkans. "For a whole generation, while Serbia was the scene of repeated *coups d'état* and political scandals, while in Bulgaria, despite wonderful progress, the representative idea has always been ruthlessly subordinated to the will of the sovereign, while Turkey groaned under the Hamidian despotism and Greece still waited for the statesman [1] who was to free her from the ban of political anarchism, Roumania, alone of all the Balkan States, could boast of an uninterrupted constitutional development." [2] In two important respects, however, Roumania is behind other Balkan countries. The agrarian problem is extremely acute. The feudal system, which has disappeared elsewhere in the Balkans, has continued to survive in Roumania, and ownership of land is mainly vested not in the peasants, but in the *boyards* or nobles. The agrarian unrest is a serious menace to the stability of the Roumanian State, and even as recently as 1907 the disaffection of the peasants provoked a formidable insurrection. Another grave defect in the Roumanian State is the persecution of its Jewish subjects, who are debarred

Merits and defects of the Roumanian State.

---

[1] Venizelos.

[2] Seton-Watson, *op. cit.* 22.

from the exercise of all civil and political rights. The Congress of Berlin (1878) made the removal of religious disabilities a condition of Roumanian independence, complete religious equality being the primary obligation imposed on every civilized community. In gross violation of this international guarantee, the Jewish people are rigidly excluded from the privileges of citizenship, though not from its burdens, from the ownership of land, and from certain trades. "It is, moreover, peculiarly galling," observes Dr. Seton-Watson, "that the Jews, though regarded as aliens and denied political rights, should be liable to military service—an arrangement which conflicts with all democratic and constitutional tradition and indeed with the most elementary ideas of give and take." [1]

Early history of Bulgaria.

The origin of the Bulgarian people is wrapped in obscurity. In very early times the country was inhabited by Thracian and Illyrian tribes, who were brought under the sway of Philip of Macedon and Alexander the Great, and were afterwards subdued by the Romans. These Thracians and Illyrians were eventually displaced by the Slavs, the date of whose incursion into the plains of Bulgaria is unknown. In the seventh century the Slavs in their turn were conquered by a race of Bulgarians (*Bulgari*), who entered the country at this period. The two races slowly amalgamated, the former perpetuating their speech, the latter perpetuating their name. Thus the modern Bulgarians are descended in the main from two different stocks, the Slavs and the old Bulgarians. At two periods in the Middle Ages Bulgaria emerged as the greatest State in the Balkans. In the reign of Simeon (893–927), who adopted the title of Tsar, she "assumed a rank," as Gibbon wrote, "among the civilized Powers of the earth." [2] His empire extended over Bulgaria proper, modern Serbia, and the greater part of Albania, but his successors were powerless to wield the sceptre he had bequeathed them. In 1018 the

---

[1] Seton-Watson, *op. cit.* 25.

[2] E. Gibbon, *Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire* (ed. J. B. Bury, 1912), vi. 140.

Greek Emperor subjugated the whole Balkan Peninsula, and for over a century and a half the Bulgarians remained under the Byzantine yoke. They recovered their independence in 1186, and under John Asên II. (1218–1241) Bulgaria again attained the position of a great military State, embracing not only Bulgaria herself, but Macedonia, Albania and part of Serbia. " All lands have I conquered," was Asên's proud boast in an inscription preserved in the church of the Forty Martyrs at Trnovo, the ancient capital of Bulgaria, " from Adrianople to Durazzo, the Greek, the Albanian, and the Serbian land. Only the towns round Constantinople and that city itself did the Franks hold; but these too bowed themselves beneath the hand of my sovereignty, for they had no other Tsar but me."[1] The second Bulgarian Empire survived from 1186 to 1398, though its power was destroyed in 1330 by Serbia at the battle of Velbužd (Köstendil). The memory of this exploit is still fresh. Upon the outbreak of war between Serbia and Bulgaria in 1885 the Serbian army marched through Belgrade with the name on their lips of the mediæval Serbian King, Dušan, who had taken the title of ' Tsar of the Bulgarians.'[2] In the feuds of the Balkan peoples the Turks found their best ally, and towards the end of the fourteenth century Bulgaria and Serbia alike collapsed before the Ottoman invaders.

The 'Bulgarian Atrocities.'

For nearly five centuries Bulgaria remained an integral part of the Ottoman Empire. The Bulgarian peasant lost his warlike character without developing political instincts, and sunk in apathy he passively accepted the supremacy of his Turkish masters. On the eve of his liberation from bondage, a material improvement in his economic condition was effected by the reforms of Midhat Pasha, the most enlightened of Turkish statesmen. The Russian officers, who passed through Bulgaria in 1877, discovered " that the ' little brothers,' whom they had come to free, were better off under the Turkish yoke than many of their own *mujiks* [peasants] under the benevolent despotism of the Tsar. In the words of an impartial eye-witness, to exchange places

---

[1] W. Miller, *The Balkans* (1896), 176.

[2] See *infra*, p. 204.

1870–78 — with the Bulgarian *râyah* ' would have been no bad bargain for the Russian peasants.' "[1] Moreover, in 1870, the Bulgarians obtained from the Porte the concession of an independent National Church, the Bulgarian Exarchate—a concession which relieved them from the tyranny of the Greek ecclesiastical system. The Bulgarians were therefore not ill-disposed towards the Turks, and the efforts of a revolutionary committee established at Bucharest to arouse the patriotism of their countrymen met with little response. In 1875, however, an event occurred which changed, as in a flash, the entire political situation in South-Eastern Europe. An insurrection broke out in the Herzegovina,[2] and it awakened revolutionary echoes throughout the whole Balkan Peninsula. Bulgaria did not escape the universal unrest, and a rising took place at Tatar-Bazardjik. The revolt was without much significance and was suppressed with ease, but the unspeakable cruelty of the Turkish soldiers covered them with infamy. At Batak, where five thousand inhabitants out of a population of seven thousand were ruthlessly massacred without distinction of age or sex, the butchery was stigmatized by the British Commissioner as " perhaps the most heinous crime that has stained the history of the present century." ' The Bulgarian Atrocities ' (1876) earned the reprobation of the whole civilized world, and the unmeasured denunciations of William Gladstone helped to impress the horror of the outrage upon the conscience of Western Europe.

Treaty of San Stefano.

Of the war between Russia and Turkey which followed in April 1877, we shall speak presently.[3] Overpowered on every side, Turkish resistance soon collapsed, and the struggle was brought to an end in March 1878 by the Treaty of San Stefano. This treaty was extremely favourable to the Bulgarians; for the moment it realized the vision of a Greater Bulgaria, the legacy of the heroic age of Bulgaria. It erected Bulgaria into a vassal State extending from the Danube to the Ægean and from the Black Sea to Albania, and comprising North and South Bulgaria (Eastern Roumelia) as well as a considerable part of Macedonia. Greece and Serbia, however, vigorously protested against a settlement which ignored their own claims upon Macedonia, and the Great Powers were no less hostile, though on different grounds. England, in particular, viewed with disapproval the proposed aggrandizement of Bulgaria, expecting that the new State would become a Russian province and so pave the way for the ultimate acquisition of Constantinople. Austria had her own grounds for dissatisfaction; she claimed as her share of the spoils the occupation of Bosnia and the Herzegovina. Russia bowed before the storm, and the Treaty of San Stefano was abrogated. The famous Congress of Berlin met in June 1878, Great Britain being represented by Lord Beaconsfield, the Prime Minister, and Lord Salisbury, the Foreign Secretary. The outcome of its deliberations was the Treaty of Berlin, which rudely shattered the dreams of a Greater Bulgaria. The new State, now established as an "autonomous and tributary principality under the suzerainty of the Sultan," was only a fragment of the State contemplated by the Treaty of San Stefano. It was restricted to Bulgaria proper, extending from the Danube to the Balkans and from the Black Sea to the frontiers of Serbia and Macedonia. The land south of the Balkan range, Eastern Roumelia, was erected into an autonomous province "under the direct political and military authority of the Sultan," but administered by "a Christian Governor-General nominated by the Porte, with the assent of the Powers, for a term of five years." The result of this settlement was to divide the Bulgarians from their kinsfolk in Eastern Roumelia and Macedonia, while "the Bulgarian-speaking district of Pirot" was also incorporated with Serbia. In the nature of things a settlement which openly violated the legitimate claims of Bulgarian nationality had no elements of permanence. The separation of North and South Bulgaria was no less indefensible on national grounds than the similar attempt to keep apart Moldavia and Wallachia twenty years before. It is a significant commentary on the foresight of diplomatists, and the vaunted arts of diplomatic expediency, that the formation of a united Bulgarian State, only a few

---

[1] Miller, *op. cit.* 206.

[2] See *infra*, p. 208.

[3] *Infra*, p. 208.

Congress of Berlin (1878).

years later, met with the approval of Great Britain, and the disapproval of the Russian Government.

Union of North and South Bulgaria (1885).

The first Prince of Bulgaria, 'the peasant State,' was Alexander of Battenberg, in whose reign the union of the two Bulgarias was effected as the result of a bloodless revolution at Philippopolis, the capital of Eastern Roumelia. The Turkish Governor was quietly expelled, and Prince Alexander was proclaimed ruler of the principality. Turkey offered no resistance, but the Tsar of Russia, Alexander III., showed his resentment by recalling the Russian officers from Bulgaria. This only had the effect of heightening the Prince's popularity among his subjects, whose gratitude to their Russian 'liberators' was rapidly cooling owing to the tactless and overbearing conduct of Russian agents. More serious at the moment, however, was the opposition raised by the other Balkan States, Greece and Serbia, who were alarmed at the aggrandizement of their rival. Greece was prevented from declaring war by the action of the Powers, which blockaded the Greek coasts, but Serbia had a free hand. The relations between the two countries had steadily deteriorated in consequence of boundary disputes and a tariff war, and public opinion in Serbia was ripe for a conflict. King Milan was also anxious to retrieve his waning prestige, and therefore easily accommodated himself to the national wishes. The Bulgarians, deprived of experienced officers, were taken at a disadvantage, but the national enthusiasm and the inspiring generalship of the Prince overcame all obstacles. The two armies came into collision at Slivnitsa; and, after a fiercely contested battle which continued for three days, the Bulgarians remained masters of the field. Austria barred their advance to the Serbian capital, and the war which had only lasted a fortnight came to an end. The Treaty of Bucharest (March 1886) brought the Bulgarians neither an indemnity nor accession of territory, but the victory of Slivnitsa had achieved its purpose of consolidating the Union.

The military exploits and frank bearing of Prince Alexander endeared him to his unemotional subjects, but Russian intrigues rendered his position untenable. He was person-

1886–94 —

ally disliked by his cousin, Alexander III., and his efforts to pursue an independent policy determined his enemies to compass his destruction. After two unsuccessful attempts the Prince was forcibly kidnapped on August 21, 1886, compelled to abdicate the throne, and then conveyed out of the country. The nation, however, rallied to his support and the Prince was recalled from exile; but lacking confidence in his ability to withstand the power of Russia, he voluntarily renounced his position. The strenuous exertions of Russian agents to defer the election of a successor to the vacant throne failed to accomplish their object, but they completed the alienation of the Bulgarian people from their Russian protectors.[1] After an interval of several months a suitable candidate was discovered in the person of Prince Ferdinand of Saxe-Coburg, a descendant of King Louis Philippe, who was chosen Prince of Bulgaria in July 1887. The new sovereign was a great contrast to his predecessor; "accident made Prince Ferdinand a sovereign, nature intended him for a student." On the other hand, he was a far abler diplomatist than Prince Alexander, and during the first seven years of his reign (1887–1894) he had the wisdom to entrust the destinies of his adopted country into the hands of Stephen Stambuloff. This remarkable man, the greatest statesman the Balkans had yet known, earned the designation of "the Bulgarian Bismarck." He came into prominence during the revolutionary movements which preceded the emancipation of Bulgaria from Turkish control, and his energetic patriotism had defeated the nefarious conspiracy against Prince Alexander. In his capacity as Prime Minister he raised the prestige of Bulgaria in the eyes of Europe by his firmness of will and the pursuit of a policy whose single aim was his country's interests. Prince Ferdinand, however, resented the uncourtierlike manners of his great minister, and the relations between them grew embittered. In 1894 he followed the example of the German Emperor[2] and dispensed with Stambuloff's services. The hatred of his enemies pursued the fallen statesman into his

Abdication of Alexander (1886).

Stephen Stambuloff.

---

[1] W. Miller, *The Ottoman Empire* (1913), 424.

[2] *Infra*, Chapter VIII.

1895 — retirement, and the following year he was brutally murdered. This shameful crime, and still more the equivocal conduct of the Government which delayed the trial of the assassins, disclosed unsavoury glimpses of the intemperate and vindictive character of Balkan domestic politics.

Early history of the Serbs.

The Serbs entered the Balkan Peninsula in the seventh century, and their settlements soon covered the Adriatic coast, extending as far south as Macedonia and embracing also the modern State of Montenegro. Ere long they were drawn into conflict with their Bulgarian neighbours, with whom they have been at enmity for more than a thousand years. The fortunes of war inclined now to one side, now to the other. When the first Bulgarian Empire was at its widest extent Serbia suffered complete annihilation.[1] But after the death of Simeon the Serbs recovered their independence, though for a time they passed under the sway of the Byzantine Emperor. The turning-point in the history of Serbia came in the twelfth century. Their misfortunes in earlier times were due in large measure to the defects of their political organization. The Serbian State was a loose federation of tribes ruled by chieftains owning but a nominal obedience to the authority of their prince. Their failure to form an effective union dissipated the strength of the Serbs and retarded for centuries their political development. This weakness was remedied by Stephen Nemanja (1143 *or* 1159 to 1195), who established his control over the chieftains and founded the Serbian monarchy. At the same time he enlarged his dominions to twice their original size by the acquisition of Dalmatia, Bosnia and other territories. Mediæval Serbia attained her zenith in the reign of Stephen Dušan (1336–1356), the most powerful of all Serbian rulers. He built up a great empire which covered very nearly the whole Balkan Peninsula—extending from the Danube to the Gulf of Corinth, and from the Adriatic to the Ægean, and including Bosnia, the Herzegovina, Macedonia, and the vassal State of Bulgaria herself. Even Constantinople was only saved by the sudden death of Dušan in 1356. The

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 198.

1790 — Serbian Empire did not long survive its founder; it rapidly fell to pieces, and thirty-three years after Dušan's death its power was finally and irrevocably shattered by the Turks at the memorable battle of Kossovo. This battle (1389) sealed the fate of the Balkan States for five centuries. Serbia was allowed to maintain a separate existence for a period of seventy years, though she was now nothing more than a dependent province; but in 1459 she was at length incorporated as an integral part of the Ottoman State.

Efforts at emancipation.

The Bulgarians owed their emancipation from Turkish bondage to the swords of a foreign Power, the Serbs to the strength of their own right arm. Even before the nineteenth century the Serbian race, imbued with a passionate love of freedom, struggled to deliver itself from the Ottoman yoke. After the battle of Kossovo, and at subsequent periods, large numbers of Serbian emigrants sought refuge across the Danube and settled in southern Hungary, where they have remained to this day. In their new home they retained their attachment to their native soil and their hatred of its oppressors, and they were a valuable auxiliary to the Hungarian kings in their wars with Turkey. On more than one occasion the liberation of Serbia seemed at hand, more particularly on the eve of the French Revolution. A Serb poet, Obradovich, called upon the Emperor Joseph II. "to protect the Serbian race and turn thy face towards a people dear to thy ancestors, towards unhappy Serbia, which suffers miseries without number. Give us back," he cried, "our ancient heroes, our ancient country!"[1] The Ottoman Empire, which owed its preservation in the nineteenth century to the mutual jealousies of the European Powers, appeared on the point of dissolution. The alliance of Austria and Russia, so often locked in deadly rivalry, foreshadowed the expulsion of the Turks from the entire Balkan Peninsula. At this critical moment in the history of the Balkans Joseph II. died (1790), and his untimely end diverted Austrian policy into other channels. The Serbian people, again enslaved by Turkey, suffered once more the bitterness of hope deferred. Their powerful neighbours had proved broken reeds; and repeated disappointments drove home the lesson which the Dutch had learnt three centuries before in their struggle against Spain, that nations like individuals must fight their own battles.

---

[1] Cited, Miller, *The Balkans*, 306.

Kara George.

The founder of the modern Serbian State was Kara George, the son of a peasant. Driven into revolt in company with other of his countrymen by the evil practices of the Janissaries quartered in Serbia (1804), he took refuge in the mountains, where he soon found himself at the head of a considerable force. It was fortunate for the Serbs that the Janissaries were equally obnoxious to the Sultan, whose authority they had defied by their insubordinate conduct and traitorous alliance with the rebellious Pasha of Widdin. The Porte therefore ordered the Pasha of Bosnia to combine with the Serbs in wresting Belgrade out of the hands of the Janissaries. The united forces accomplished their objective; the Mussulman revolt was suppressed; and Serbia was freed from the military oppression under which she had groaned. Flushed with their victory over the turbulent Janissaries, and finding themselves in possession of arms, the Serbs were now tempted to make a bid for independence against the Turkish Government itself. They demanded the evacuation of Serbian fortresses by Turkish troops. The Sultan was in no mood to concede a demand which would have destroyed his hold over the population. He endeavoured to crush the revolt of the Serbs, as he had crushed the revolt of the Janissaries. Army after army was sent against the insurgents, who profited by the rough and mountainous conditions of their country—conditions "profoundly favourable to guerilla warfare." [1] The war was brought to an end by the overwhelming defeat of the Turkish army at Mischar (1806). The Sultan yielded most liberal terms: complete autonomy, the evacuation of all Serbian fortresses except Belgrade, and the expropriation of Turkish landowners. It was indeed a memorable triumph for the Serbs, who had fought their way to freedom under their peasant leader without any foreign help. For a few years the land had rest. The interests of Turkey demanded peace, for the shadow of Russia had fallen across her path. In 1812, however, the shadow passed away, and Russia, preoccupied with Napoleon's approaching invasion of her soil, did not attempt to save the Serbian people from reconquest. Kara George threw up the unequal contest in despair, but the mantle of the heroic Serbian leader fell upon the shoulders of another peasant, Milosh Obrenovich, the second founder of modern Serbia. The struggle for independence was renewed, and in 1815 the Sultan, again confronted by the prospect of Russian intervention, conceded the right of self-government. A few years later the Treaty of Adrianople (1829)[1] erected Serbia into what was practically an independent State, and Milosh was recognized as hereditary Prince.

---

[1] Lyde and Mockler-Ferryman, *A Military Geography of the Balkan Peninsula* (1905), 89.

Rival Serbian dynasties.

It has been a grave misfortune for Serbia that she is indebted for her liberation to the founders of two rival dynasties, the Karageorgevich and the Obrenovich. The feuds of these families assumed from the first the character of a vendetta. Milosh set an evil precedent when he procured the assassination of Kara George (1817) in order to remove a dangerous rival from his path, and the crime was avenged to the second and third generations in the blood of his own kinsfolk. Moreover, his tyrannical rule and arbitrary exactions estranged his countrymen, and in 1839 he was forced to abdicate. He was succeeded by his two sons, Milan Obrenovich II. and Michael Obrenovich III. The former died almost immediately after his accession, and even the latter only occupied the throne for three short years. The Serbs next chose as their ruler Alexander Karageorgevich, the son of the great national leader. After a reign of sixteen years (1842–1858) Alexander in his turn was deposed. During the Crimean War he had remained neutral, and this policy was unpopular with the nation, whose sympathies were with Russia. Another change of dynasty now followed. Milosh was recalled from exile at the age of seventy-nine, and resumed his autocratic sway until his death in 1860. He handed on the reins of govern-

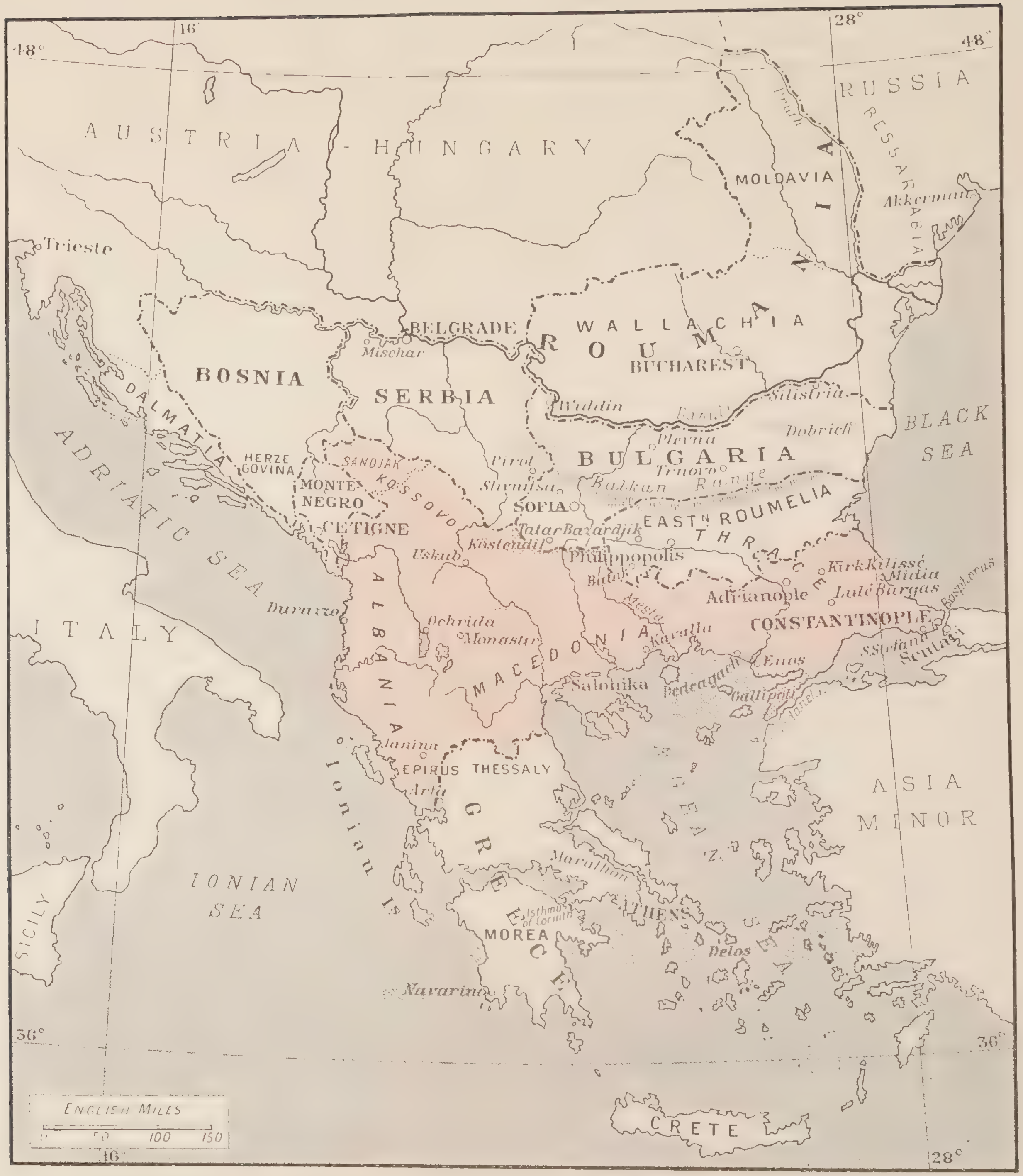
---

[1] *Supra*, p. 193.

1860–77 ment to his son, Michael Obrenovich III., who had occupied the throne for a short period eighteen years before. Prince Michael was the wisest and most capable ruler Serbia has yet known. He instituted various political and economic reforms adapted to the backward condition of his peasant subjects, and in 1867 he induced the Porte to withdraw the Turkish garrisons from all Serbian fortresses. By this great diplomatic triumph and the moderation of his rule Prince Michael had earned well of his country, but the adherents of the Karageorgevich dynasty were irreconcilable, and the Prince was brutally assassinated in 1868. An attempt was made to proclaim as his successor Peter Karageorgevich, son of the exiled Prince Alexander, but the energy of the Government defeated the project, and the crown devolved on Michael's cousin, Milan Obrenovich IV.

The Russo-Turkish War of 1877.

The reign of Prince Milan is memorable for the great uprising of the Serbian race in 1875. We have already dealt with its influence upon the fortunes of Roumania and Bulgaria, and we have now to see how it affected Serbia and Montenegro. The movement began in the Herzegovina, where the peasantry suffered intolerable oppression at the hands of landlords and rapacious tax-farmers. It is said that the cultivator of the soil paid no less than two-thirds of his crop in taxes, and the burden of feudal obligations involved him in all the evils of economic servitude. The insurrection spread to Bosnia, and public opinion forced Serbia and Montenegro to come to the assistance of their oppressed Serbian kinsfolk. In the war which ensued the Turks were victorious, and Russia intervened to save Serbia from destruction. There seemed for a time a danger lest Russia would become embroiled with Great Britain, but the peril passed away as a result of the Bulgarian atrocities, which made it impossible for this country to ally itself with Turkey, as it had done in the Crimean War. "The impression produced here by events in Bulgaria," wrote the English Foreign Secretary, "has completely destroyed sympathy with Turkey. The feeling is universal and so strong that even if Russia were to declare war against the Porte, Her Majesty's Government would find it practically impossible



THE BALKAN PENINSULA IN 1912

(The portion shaded red represents the Ottoman Empire in Europe.)

to interfere." The Treaty of San Stefano, by which the war was brought to an end, was favourable to the two Serbian States, whose frontiers now became almost coterminous. Serbia received a large accession of territory on the south, and Montenegro was "trebled in size and doubled in population." These terms, however, were revised at the Congress of Berlin. Montenegro was made to resign half her acquisitions, and Serbia was compensated for the loss of her southern gains at the expense of Bulgaria. In addition, Bosnia and the Herzegovina were "occupied" by Austria. This settlement drove a wedge between the Serbs of Serbia, Montenegro, Bosnia and the Herzegovina. It disappointed, therefore, the expectations of Serbian patriots, who had hoped to unite the whole Serbian race under one ruler, and it sowed the seeds of an irreconcilable feud between the Serbs and the Austro-Hungarian monarchy.

The Serbian monarchy

As the result of the Russo-Turkish War, Serbia gained not only a great accession of territory, but the formal recognition of her independence, and in 1882 Prince Milan assumed the title of king. For the next twenty years Serbian history is mainly a record of court scandals, assassinations, and repeated *coups d'État.* King Milan, who was very unpopular with his subjects, abdicated in 1889. His successor, Alexander, was a minor, and for a period of four years the country was ruled by Regents. In 1893 the King seized the reins of government into his hands and abolished the Liberal Constitution drawn up by his predecessor. An unfortunate marriage undermined his position, and in 1903, on the anniversary of the assassination of Prince Michael (June 10), he was foully murdered with his Queen by his own officers. The assassination of Alexander, who died without an heir, brought the Obrenovich dynasty to an end. The throne reverted to the Karageorgevich dynasty, now represented by King Peter, whose father had been Prince of Serbia for sixteen years (1842–1858). In two respects the present sovereign differs from his predecessors. He has abandoned the Austrophil policy of King Milan, and—as is fitting for one who has translated John Stuart Mill's *Essay on Liberty*—he has governed Serbia as a constitutional King.

CHAPTER VII

THE EUROPEAN CONCERT

1815-23 — *The dream of universal peace.*

AMONG the effects of the French Revolution on English political thought, perhaps the most important, and certainly the most immediate, lay in concentrating the attention of English reformers on the possibility of universal peace. The main accusation brought against the eighteenth-century governments was that they sacrificed the interests of the nation to the dynastic and territorial ambitions of its rulers. In every country, wrote Thomas Paine in the *Rights of Man*, we see "age going to the workhouse and youth to the gallows"; and he attributed the poverty and wretchedness of the great bulk of mankind to the perpetual system of war and the enormous burden of taxation which it necessarily involved. The money wasted on war, and the preparations for war, deprived civilization of its abundance, and ground the poor down to the extremest poverty. The French Revolution inspired the belief in English writers that the dawn of peace was at hand, and that democracy would unite nations in the bonds of lasting friendship. The history of the nineteenth century has shown how little this expectation was fulfilled. The warm hopes which filled the hearts of English reformers were doomed to disappointment, and the golden age which the Revolution promised was never fulfilled. For Rousseau and the vision of nature were substituted Napoleon and a Europe in arms, and a titanic duel ensued between France and the Coalition, extending over twenty years. The close of the revolutionary epoch left Europe satiated with blood, and painfully anxious to devise a form of international government which would serve as a security against the menace of future wars. The experiment of a European Concert lasted eight years (1815–1823); its history and the causes of its failure convey a lesson of profound interest at a time when the course of events has produced a situation parallel, in many respects, to that which existed a hundred years ago. 1815–23

—

The European Confederation.

The idea of a commonwealth of nations was not a creation of the nineteenth century; it was a legacy of mediæval political philosophy. The Holy Roman Empire was the earliest form of a European Confederation, and it represented a rudimentary attempt to give substance to the vision of Isaiah—a world united in peace. After the Reformation the Holy Roman Empire ceased, even in theory, to be the pivot of the European state-system; and the public law of Europe, as enunciated in the classical treatises of Grotius and other famous publicists, entirely discarded the notion of a supreme head ruling over a community of nations. Henceforth the cardinal doctrine of international relationships rested upon the theory that all sovereign States are not only absolutely independent, but treat with each other upon a footing of complete legal equality; and whether weak or strong, they are burdened with the same rights and obligations. International law, as it is now constituted, no longer recognizes the existence of a sovereign authority empowered to settle disputes and issue commands having the force of law. In practice, however, this doctrine of the legal equality of States has been superseded by the actual political superiority of the Great Powers. In the nineteenth century the destinies of Europe were in the hands of five or six States, which arrogated to themselves a preponderant influence in all matters of general concern: for example, the separation of Holland and Belgium,[1] and the Eastern Question.[2] We might suppose that this predominance of the great States and elimination of the secondary States would have facilitated the harmonious working of a European Concert, but in reality the effect has been to sharpen the rivalry of the survivors. Hence the present situation has emerged in which Europe is divided into two armed camps,

---

[1] *Infra*, p. 229.

[2] *Supra*, Chapter VI

1815 — and the prospect of international comity appears more remote than ever. The purpose of the present chapter is to examine the reasons why the first serious effort to establish a Confederated Europe failed so disastrously.

The Vienna Congress.

The close of the Napoleonic Wars seemed to afford a unique opportunity for an international experiment: the establishment of a European federal system. The danger of revolutionary propaganda had drawn together the Great Powers in a coalition which had finally imposed its will upon the French people. The question therefore arose whether it was possible to create a United Europe, sharing common rights and acknowledging common obligations. But the Congress of Vienna disappointed the expectations of a confederated Europe. "Men had promised themselves," wrote Gentz in a survey of the work accomplished by the Vienna Congress, "an all-embracing reform of the political system of Europe; guarantees for peace; in one word, the return of the Golden Ages. The Congress has resulted in nothing but restorations, which had already been effected by arms; agreements between the Great Powers, of little value for the future balance and preservation of the peace of Europe; quite arbitrary alterations in the possessions of the less important States; but in no act of a higher nature, no great measure for public order or for the universal good, which might compensate humanity for its long sufferings or reassure it as to the future. . . . The Protocol of the Congress bears the stamp rather of a temporary agreement than of work destined to last for centuries."

Why the European Concert failed.

The ultimate reason why the Great Powers failed to work together in harmony after the fall of Napoleon must be ascribed to fundamental diversities in their ideas and institutions. In a well-ordered community all men are not required to profess identical opinions on social, religious, or political questions; they can combine their efforts for the common good, and co-operate in the pursuit of common ends, without sharing the same sentiments on every conceivable subject. A dead level of uniformity, rightly understood, is a source of weakness rather than of strength, for variation is the law of our being and the primary condi-

1815 —

tion of progress. None the less, association for any purpose necessarily implies a general similarity of outlook, consciousness of mutual interests, and willingness to sacrifice freedom of action. Upon the extent to which these postulates are satisfied, will depend whether a State is unitary like Great Britain, or federal like the United States of America. Where none of these postulates are satisfied, there can exist neither a unitary State nor a federal State. Now in 1815 the development of Europe was not sufficiently advanced to fulfil any of these conditions, and this explains the fundamental weakness of the new international structure and its rapid collapse. The history of (1) the Holy Alliance, and (2) the Quadruple Alliance, will serve to show why it was impossible to establish, in the words of Gentz, "a political system by which wars of conquest would be rendered impossible." The delicate adjustment of rival national claims was to prove a task insuperable for the nineteenth century.

Alexander's schemes for a confederated Europe.

(1) The Holy Alliance was the creation of Alexander I. The Russian Emperor was a visionary and a mystic, open to generous impulses, but a man of moods and unstable imagination. In the early part of his reign he showed a leaning towards Liberal principles, going so far as to bestow a Constitution on Poland, while he also contemplated a Constitution even for Russia. His Liberalism, it is true, never penetrated far below the surface; for, as his own minister, Czartoryski, wrote: "The Emperor would willingly have consented that every one should be free, on condition that every one should do his will alone."[1] The plan of a European Confederation naturally made a warm appeal to his impressionable temperament. Two centuries before, Henry IV. of France had unfolded a somewhat similar idea to the Holy Alliance in the Grand Design, which is said to have been inspired by Queen Elizabeth. It set up a General Council, or Senate, modelled on the Amphictyonic Council of Greece, comprising sixty-six delegates from the different countries, whose duties were to settle disputes and keep the peace of Europe. Sully

---

[1] W. A. Phillips, *The Confederation of Europe* (1914), 57.

1804 — described the purpose of the Grand Design as intended "to deliver them for ever from the fear of bloody catastrophes, so common in Europe; to secure for them an unalterable repose, so that all the princes might henceforth live together as brothers."[1] This scheme was cut short by Henry's death in 1610, but it reappeared a century later in the *Projet de paix perpétuelle* of the Abbé de St. Pierre (1713), which proposed the formation of a European League, whose members surrendered the right of making war on each other, and submitted their differences to the arbitration of a permanent Congress.[2] At the beginning of the nineteenth century it was again revived by the Russian Emperor. "The drawback to Russia as an ally," said Moltke, "is that she arrives on the field very late, and is then too strong." This happened in the War of Liberation, and the unbroken strength of his forces in the field gave Alexander a preponderant influence in the councils of the Allies, which he now employed on behalf of his favourite project. Already in 1804 he had made overtures to England for a new international system, which was chiefly noteworthy for the admission that the peace of Europe could never be established until the "internal order" of every country "shall have been founded on a wise liberty," as "a barrier against the passions, the unbridled ambition, or the madness which often drives out of their senses" those in whom power is vested. These memorable words recall the teaching of Kant, that the only possible basis of universal peace is true representative government.[3] Alexander's overtures resulted in a treaty between Great Britain and Russia, in which Pitt agreed that after the conclusion of peace the Great Powers should guarantee each other their possessions, in order to prevent "future attempts to trouble the general tranquillity."[4] It is clear that the English minister meant only that France should not be allowed to disturb the future settlement of Europe by fresh "projects of aggrandizement

---

[1] *Mémoires de Sully* (ed. 1745), ii. 81; iii. bk. xxx.

[2] The provisions are given in Phillips, *op. cit.* 22.

[3] Kant, *Perpetual Peace* (ed. M. Campbell Smith, 1903), 120 *seq.* Cf. also 33 *seq.*

[4] Phillips, *op. cit.* 34, 38.

ALEXANDER I

Emperor of Russia (1801-1825).

From the Portrait by Gerard at Versailles.

and ambition." Alexander, on the other hand, interpreted his scheme in the light of a European League on the lines of the Grand Design. Thus, while Great Britain was concerned only with an immediate and practical object—the overthrow of Napoleon—the Emperor entertained the more ambitious idea of a supreme court whose sphere should cover all matters of European interest. This clash of opinions could no longer be concealed after Alexander published to the world the plan of the Holy Alliance. The English Government withheld its signature, declining to stultify its freedom of action by taking part in a vague and shadowy project which bound the contracting monarchs "on all occasions and in all places [to] lend each other aid and assistance." 1815 —

The Holy Alliance.

The Holy Alliance has been greatly misunderstood; not only has its purpose been misinterpreted, but its practical significance has been overrated. It was regarded at the time as a symbol of Reaction, a conspiracy against Liberalism, a league of princes against their peoples. It is worth while to quote the text of the Holy Alliance in order to show how far this view is justified. "The present Act," it is solemnly declared by the contracting parties, "has no other object than to publish, in the face of the whole world, their fixed resolution, both in the administration of their respective States and in their political relations with every other Government, to take for their sole guide the precepts of that Holy Religion, namely, the precepts of Justice, Christian Charity and Peace, which, far from being applicable only to private concerns, must have an immediate influence on the counsels of Princes, and guide all their steps, as being the only means of consolidating human institutions and remedying their imperfections."[1] Translated into other terms, the Holy Alliance seemed to imply nothing more than that sovereigns were henceforth to regard each other as brothers "united by the bonds of a true and indissoluble fraternity," and their subjects as their children, whom they were to rule "as fathers of families." This exemplary doctrine, honoured in the breach but rarely in the observance,

---

[1] Hertslet, *The Map of Europe by Treaty*, i. 317.

1815 — and subscribed to by the three great autocracies, naturally awakened the suspicion that it veiled a sinister design against the liberties of Europe. This, however, was not the case; on the contrary, Alexander even sought to persuade his allies that the Holy Alliance involved as its corollary the acceptance of constitutional principles of government.

How far significant.

The Holy Alliance was nominally, then, an attempt to apply the principles of morality to international diplomacy, in other words, to create in Europe a political conscience. To all intents and purposes this nebulous scheme, which loomed so prominently before the eyes of contemporaries, never materialized, and was still-born. All Alexander's efforts were unavailing "to provide the transparent soul of the Holy Alliance with a body." Castlereagh treated it as "a piece of sublime mysticism and nonsense"; and Metternich, who regarded the Russian Emperor as a Jacobin, looked upon it as merely a "loud-sounding nothing," or "moral demonstration." "The Holy Alliance," he explained, "was merely a philanthropic aspiration clothed in a religious garb." It "was not an institution to keep down the rights of the people, to promote absolutism or any other tyranny. It was only the overflow of the pietistic feeling of the Emperor Alexander and the application of Christian principles to politics." [1] But though the practical importance of the Holy Alliance was negligible, it merits attention because it disclosed a fundamental disparity of opinion between the Eastern Powers on the one hand and the British Government on the other.

The system of Metternich.

(2) We have seen how Alexander's vision of a Holy Alliance was shattered, in so far as its main purpose was concerned, by the refusal of English statesmen to be drawn into an alliance whose objects were so vague and undefined. A like fate overtook what may be termed the 'system of Metternich,' which eventually led England to withdraw from the European Concert and "move steadily on in her own orbit." [2]

---

[1] Metternich, *Memoirs*, i. 260, 262.

[2] Canning's words: A. G. Stapleton, *The Political Life of George Canning* (1831), i. 489.

1815

—

The Quadruple Alliance.

While persisting in her resolution to hold aloof from the Holy Alliance, Great Britain was willing to co-operate with the Continental Powers for certain well-defined ends. As early as 1791 Kaunitz, the Austrian minister, had urged that since Europe was "a single family of nations," it was the duty of all States "to make common cause in order to preserve the public peace, the tranquillity of States, the inviolability of possessions, and the faith of treaties."[1] His proposals were directed against France, and the European Concert in its origin was thus the direct outcome of the French Revolution. For over twenty years the Governments of Europe fought the revolutionary democracy of France, resisting the aggression of French ideas and French force; and coalition after coalition was built up until Napoleon, exhausted by the struggle, finally succumbed at Waterloo. After the Congress of Vienna the dissolution of the Quadruple Alliance—consisting of Great Britain, Austria, Russia, and Prussia—appeared imminent, since it had now achieved the purpose for which it was originally formed. Indeed, from the start its existence had been endangered by petty jealousies and rivalries, which were only hushed for the moment by the dramatic episode of the Hundred Days when Napoleon returned from Elba. In reality the work of the Quadruple Alliance was not completed, and it was necessary to devise measures which would shield the new order in Europe from the shock of fresh revolutionary assaults. The reception accorded by the French nation to Napoleon upon his reappearance in their midst showed that he still retained his extraordinary hold upon their affections. It demonstrated that France at heart was not reconciled to the Government imposed upon her by the arms of the Allies, and it seemed to suggest that at the first opportunity the old revolutionary passions would blaze out again in a great national effort to recover the Rhine frontier. The peril of French propaganda had called into existence the Concert of Europe, and the dread of France continued to keep the Quadruple Alliance together even after Waterloo. In order to safeguard the territorial

---

[1] A. Sorel, *L'Europe et la Révolution Française* (1887), ii. 232-3.

1815 — and political settlement so laboriously constructed by the Congress of Vienna, the Allies must be prepared for a renewal of the conflict at the first sign of unrest. Accordingly, in November 1815, the four Great Powers contracted a Treaty of Alliance, purporting " to guarantee Europe from dangers by which she may still be menaced." The purpose of the Alliance was laid down in clear unmistakable terms, testifying to the fear that " Revolutionary principles . . . might again . . . convulse France, and thereby endanger the peace of other States."[1] The contrast between the Treaty of Alliance, openly designed as it was for a definite and practical object, and the Holy Alliance with its vague and nebulous principles, served to measure the difference between the idealism of Alexander and the sober statesmanship of Castlereagh.

The Treaty of Alliance.

The Treaty of Alliance, while framed in a moderate and cautious spirit, contained one clause which lent itself to elastic interpretation. This was the famous Sixth Article, which on account of its extreme importance merits quotation: " In order to consolidate the connexions which at the present moment so closely unite the four sovereigns, the High Contracting Parties have agreed to renew at fixed intervals, either under their own auspices or by their representative ministers, meetings consecrated to great common objects and the examination of such measures as at each one of these epochs shall be judged most salutary for the peace and prosperity of the nations, and for the maintenance of the peace of Europe." This Article was the foundation of the European Concert destined, as will be seen, to cover a period of eight years (1815–1823). It provided a basis for common action on the part of the Great Powers, who were to hold periodical conferences in order to deal with the various questions submitted for their consideration. Now it was immediately apparent that meetings consecrated to great objects would not confine their attention to the situation in France; thus the Article pledged the Allies to cooperate together in a variety of matters which had nothing to do with the nominal objects for which the Alliance existed.

---

[1] Hertslet, *The Map of Europe by Treaty*, i. 372 *seq.*

Hence, while Great Britain disclaimed the principles embodied in the Holy Alliance, she found herself committed to a system of joint conferences, unconscious at the moment of the purpose to which the conferences would be turned. The net result, in short, was to substitute the hegemony of the Allies for the federative unity of all the Powers as contemplated by Alexander. In the eyes of the secondary States the dictatorship of the four Great Powers was, in a moral sense, no less unjustifiable than the dictatorship of Napoleon which it superseded; but they protested in vain. We have now to see how these Congresses—which were four in number, Aix-la-Chapelle, Troppau, Laibach, and Verona—worked out in practice. Their history will serve also to elucidate the principles by which English policy during this period was governed.

(1) *The Congress of Aix-la-Chapelle* (1818).

The first Congress met in 1818 at Aix-la-Chapelle after an interval of three years. Metternich, who wrote that he had "never seen a prettier little Congress,"[1] had good reason to congratulate himself on its success, for it marked the zenith of the system by which the Allied Powers endeavoured to establish a joint control over the affairs of all continental States. Like the Amphictyonic Council of Greece, the Congress was universally recognized as the supreme council of Europe, and it entertained appeals in the most miscellaneous matters. Denmark invoked assistance against Sweden; the Elector of Hesse petitioned for the title of king; German princes sought redress of their grievances; the people of Monaco complained against their ruler; and the Congress also dealt with the disputed succession to the duchy of Baden and the position of Jewish citizens in Austria and Prussia. In spite of the moral ascendancy of the Congress, however, the inherent weakness of the system which it embodied was already in evidence. The Congress at Aix-la-Chapelle witnessed, in fact, the first rift in the lute, which steadily widened at subsequent Congresses until the whole Alliance was shattered to pieces. On the question of the evacuation of France there was general agreement, and at the same time France was admitted into the Alliance

---

[1] *Memoirs*, iii. 144.

1818 — which now became, in the phrase of Metternich, a "moral pentarchy." But in other directions a fundamental divergence of opinions was speedily disclosed. In the first place the failure to settle the two outstanding questions of the Congress—regarding the Slave Trade and the Barbary pirates—showed that, where any question seriously affected its interests, no State was prepared to make concessions or sacrifice its own inclinations and wishes for the common good. In order to suppress the Slave Trade, Great Britain suggested that the European States should exercise a mutual right of search, but the proposal was wrecked from jealousy of England's sea-power, since none of the countries would tolerate interference with their commercial relations. The Barbary pirates menaced the whole European seaboard, and Russia proposed that an international fleet should be stationed in the Mediterranean to stamp out the evil. Great Britain, whose flag the Barbary pirates respected, was alarmed at the prospect of a Russian navy in the Mediterranean; and the project therefore fell to the ground. Thus incurable distrust fomented the spirit of discord and foiled all attempts at effective concert and harmonious co-operation.

Its significance. The real significance of the Congress of Aix-la-Chapelle, however, lies deeper; it awakened for the first time the apprehensions of English statesmen as to the real character of the principles underlying the European Concert. Alexander proposed that a Declaration should be signed by all the Powers guaranteeing the existing territorial settlement and the rights of sovereign princes. This proposal was greatly welcomed by Austria and Prussia. On his part Metternich recognized that a universal guarantee of the *status quo* would facilitate the systematic suppression of free institutions, stifling the development of Europe in the fetters of hide-bound conservatism. It pledged the European States to concert common measures against revolution and to come to the assistance of any Government which was unable to keep its subjects in order. It was, in fact, nothing less than a crusade against the heresy of revolution, and would have retarded indefinitely all constitutional progress.

It would have been equally fatal to the other great revolutionary force of the nineteenth century, the principle of nationality. It guaranteed the inviolability of possessions, and this would have prevented the unification of Italy and Germany; the separation of Holland and Belgium, Norway and Sweden; the liberation of the Balkan States—in a word, the map of Europe as it is to-day. Accordingly the European Concert, as conceived at this period by Russia, Austria and Prussia, would have secured the peace of Europe at the price of constitutional liberty and national independence. The credit for the failure of this sinister project belonged to the British Government whose firm attitude compelled the other Powers to abandon the scheme. The point at issue really turned on the right of intervention: it involved the fundamental question whether the five Great Powers, the moral pentarchy of Europe, were entitled to arrogate to themselves authority to intervene in any country on the pretext of preserving the *status quo*. The nominal purpose of the Concert of Europe was to prevent the recurrence of those revolutionary wars, which had already engulfed the Continent once in a sea of blood and might do so again. This logically implied a certain degree of control over the external relations of the different countries, which in its turn seemed to involve the right to regulate their internal affairs. For since Europe, in the words of Kaunitz, constituted "a single family of nations," what concerned one concerned all; and the infection of a revolution which was not stamped out at its source would spread over Europe with the rapidity of lightning. This actually happened in 1830 and 1848, when the example set by the democracy of Paris awakened echoes in almost every capital on the Continent. None the less England refused to subscribe to a doctrine of intervention fraught with such deadly menace to the national liberties of every European country. It is true that the case of France could be cited as an example of intervention, but one isolated instance did not establish a principle. The circumstances were clearly exceptional, yet even here Castlereagh in the Treaty of Alliance (1815), the original basis of the European Concert, had been careful to 1818 —

1820–21 — prevent "too strong and undisguised an interference in the internal concerns of France." In regard to other States, Great Britain was not prepared to acquiesce in any general principle of international control; each particular emergency was to be considered separately as it arose, in order that the Powers should not be bound beforehand to a course of action which might be injurious to the interests of the nation concerned. The English Government strenuously repudiated the idea that the collective force of the Allies was "to be prostituted to the support of established power, without any consideration of the extent to which it was abused." The Alliance, protested Castlereagh, was never "intended as an union for the government of the World, or for the superintendence of the internal affairs of other States."[1] Its purpose was not to suppress revolutionary movements in whatever part of Europe they might break out, independent of the special circumstances which might be pleaded on their behalf. With the fear of Parliament before their eyes, neither Castlereagh, Wellington, nor Canning, dared embark upon an uncharted sea, where navigation was particularly perilous when the helm was guided by Governments so reactionary as those of Austria and Russia.

(2) *and* (3) *The Congresses of Troppau and Laibach* (1820–21).

The suspicions of English ministers, first awakened at Aix-la-Chapelle, that the Concert of Europe threatened to extinguish the liberties of Europe, were amply confirmed by the proceedings at the Congresses held in later years. The second Congress met at Troppau in 1820, and the following year was adjourned to Laibach. It was summoned on account of the Neapolitan revolt, with whose history we have already dealt.[2] Under pressure from his subjects Ferdinand, King of Naples, had been compelled to grant a Constitution, and this afforded Austria a pretext for intervention. Castlereagh's attitude was clearly defined from the outset. He believed that Austria was justified in interfering in Naples for two reasons. In the first place she had great interests at stake in the Peninsula; and the stability of her dominion in Lombardy, Venetia, and the Central States was imperilled by the revolutionary ferment in the south. 1820–21 In the second place, a treaty concluded by Ferdinand with the Austrian Emperor five years before entitled the latter to resist any changes in the Neapolitan system of government inconsistent with the principles adopted by Austria in her own Italian provinces.[1] On these grounds none of the Powers protested against Austria lending her forces to crush the Neapolitan rising, although Ferdinand's appeal for assistance was a flagrant breach of the solemn oath he had taken to respect the new Constitution. Metternich, however, was not content with the bare recognition of his right to exercise a free hand in Italian affairs. He wanted the moral support of the Allies and proposed that they should back up the Austrian policy by refusing to acknowledge the revolutionary Government of Naples, and at the same time bring diplomatic pressure to bear upon the situation through their ministers. To this proposal Castlereagh returned a categorical refusal. He took his stand by the principle that no State was justified in meddling with the domestic affairs of any other State unless on grounds of treaty rights. The Neapolitan revolt lay outside the orbit of Great Britain's concerns, and this country having no legitimate pretext for interference would preserve an attitude of strict neutrality. The case of Austria rested on a different footing; her treaty with Naples gave her a legal excuse for intervention, if she considered that her vital interests were at stake. Metternich, on the other hand, was anxious to obtain a mandate from Europe in order to establish the right of intervention not on narrow legal grounds, but on the broad basis of a general principle—the principle, namely, that popular insurrections, revolutions originating from below, were 'illegitimate,' and should be placed under the ban of Europe as a violation of its public law. In adopting this standpoint the Austrian statesman formulated a policy containing within it the seeds of disruption, since it was bound sooner or later to occasion a schism in the Alliance.

---

[1] Stapleton, *The Political Life of Canning*, i. 139.
[2] *Supra*, p. 164.

Metternich's hands were strengthened at this juncture by a change which took place in the personal views of the

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 166.

1820–21 — *Alexander's 'conversion.'*

Emperor Alexander. The murder of Kotzebue[1] had shaken his faith in Liberal principles which were never deep-seated, and his alienation was completed by the news of a mutiny of the Imperial Guards at Petrograd. The revolt was provoked by the cruelty of the German colonel of the regiment, who had introduced Prussian methods of discipline and "did not spare" his men "any of those indignities which are as dishonouring to those who suffer as to those who inflict them."[2] No political significance, therefore, attached to the mutiny, but it served to throw Alexander unreservedly into the arms of the Austrian minister. "So we are at one, Prince, and it is to you that we owe it," he said to Metternich at Troppau. "You have correctly judged the state of affairs. I deplore the waste of time, which we must try to repair. I am here without any fixed ideas; without any plan; but I bring you a firm and unalterable resolution. It is for your Emperor to use it as he wills. Tell me what you desire, and what you wish me to do, and I will do it."[3] The results of Alexander's conversion to the Austrian 'system' were, in a diplomatic sense, momentous. Hitherto Austria had entertained a profound distrust of Russian policy, believing that the mass of verbiage in which Alexander wrapped his lofty sentiments veiled a secret determination to make himself the dictator of Europe. It was well known, for example, that Russian agents had spread themselves over every part of the Continent, encouraging revolutionary unrest and inspiring the belief that Russian influence would be exerted on the side of progressive movements. Hence for five years the counsels of Metternich had been distracted by the fear of an alliance between Russia, on the one hand, and France and the minor German States—like Würtemberg—on the other. The reconciliation with Alexander simplified the position immensely, for it ensured that Austria in her campaign against Liberalism could henceforth rely upon Russian support. Thus it foreshadowed the cleavage of the Quintuple Alliance into two divisions: on the one side the reactionary Governments of Austria,

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 47.

[2] Phillips, *Confederation of Europe*, 220, *n.* 38.

[3] *Ibid.* 219.

1820 Russia and Prussia; on the other side the constitutional Governments of Great Britain and France.

The Protocol of Troppau.

The altered situation was reflected in the famous Protocol of Troppau, which enshrined the principle of intervention in set terms: "States which have undergone a change of Government due to revolution, the results of which threaten other States, *ipso facto* cease to be members of the European Alliance, and remain excluded from it until their situation gives guarantees for legal order and stability. If, owing to such alterations, immediate danger threatens other States, the Powers bind themselves, by peaceful means, or if need be by arms, to bring back the guilty State into the bosom of the Great Alliance." Great Britain refused to be a party to this declaration. A second time Castlereagh reiterated his objection to the attempt "to reduce to an abstract rule of conduct possible cases of interference in the internal affairs of independent States." The arguments he employed in a skilful analysis of the situation were irrefutable. The Protocol would be interpreted as a league of sovereigns against their subjects and so hasten the advent of the very revolutionary crisis it was intended to hold in check. Moreover, "would the Great Powers of Europe be prepared to admit the principle that their territories were to be thrown open to each other's approach upon cases of assumed necessity or expediency, of which not the party receiving aid, but the party administering it, was to be the judge?"[1] An English minister who dared to endorse the application of this principle to Great Britain would lay himself open to impeachment; and it was equally out of question to sanction its application to other States as part of the public law of Europe. The French Revolution was exceptional "from its overbearing and conquering character"; it did not justify intervention in all cases of revolution. In short, the British Government expressly dissociated itself from "the moral responsibility" of a police-system which would inevitably "lead to the creation of a species of general government in Europe, with a superintending Directory, destructive of all correct notions of internal sovereign authority"

---

[1] See *Camb. Mod. Hist.* x. 28 *seq.*, and Phillips, *op. cit.* 222 *seq.*

1822 — *(4) The Congress of Verona (1822).*

The fourth and final Congress was held at Verona in 1822. It dealt almost exclusively with the Spanish Question. As the result of a revolution in 1820, the King of Spain, Ferdinand VII., had been forced to abolish the Inquisition and proclaim a Constitution; but from the first he acted with duplicity, invoking foreign help against his own subjects. His solicitations met with a favourable response from the Ultra-Royalists, who were pursuing under the influence of Chateaubriand a policy of glory and were eager to espouse the cause of the Bourbon King.[1] At the Congress of Verona, France announced her intention to intervene in Spain to restore the absolute monarchy, and claimed the moral support of the Allied Powers. Austria, Russia and Prussia replied, as Wellington, the British plenipotentiary, informed the home Government, that they would give France every countenance and assistance she should require. Great Britain, on the other hand, remained obdurate, adhering steadfastly to the doctrine of non-intervention. The instructions of Wellington insisted upon "a rigid abstinence from any interference in the internal affairs" of Spain. The result was therefore a definite breach with the continental Powers, and when a French army crossed the Spanish frontier the collapse of the European system was rendered complete and undisguised. Canning, who had succeeded Castlereagh as Foreign Secretary on the eve of the Congress of Verona, felt no misgivings at this failure of the European Concert. He did not conceal his gratification that "the issue of Verona [had] split the one and indivisible Alliance into three parts as distinct as the Constitutions of England, France and Muscovy."[2] "Things are getting back to a wholesome state again," he wrote. "Every nation for itself, and God for us all. The time for Areopagus, and the like of that, is gone by."

Collapse of the European Concert.

The attempt to establish a Federated Europe was thus shipwrecked upon the rock of conflicting national aspirations. It was impossible to reconcile the divergent views of Great Britain on the one hand, and those of the continental Powers on the other. The key to British policy was the principle of non-intervention in the affairs of sovereign and independent States. To this principle Castlereagh and Canning consistently adhered, though the former was anxious to avoid an open rupture with the Allied Courts. His successor, however, had no such scruples; and Metternich looked upon him, therefore, as a "malevolent meteor hurled by an angry Providence upon Europe."[1] Canning's letter to the British ambassador at Vienna in 1823 expressed in unequivocal language the course of action which the English Government from the first had steadfastly pursued. "England is under no obligation to interfere, or to assist in interfering, in the internal concerns of independent nations. The specific engagement to interfere in France is an exception so studiously particularized as to prove the rule. The rule I take to be, that our engagements have reference wholly to the state of territorial possession settled at the Peace; to the state of affairs between nation and nation; not (with the single exception above stated) to the affairs of any nation within itself." He added: "What is the influence we have had in the counsels of the Alliance? We protested at Laibach, we remonstrated at Verona. Our protest was treated as waste-paper; our remonstrances mingled with the air. Our influence, if it is to be maintained abroad, must be secure in the sources of strength at home; and the sources of that strength are in the sympathy between the people and the Government; in the union of the public sentiment with the public counsels; in the reciprocal confidence and co-operation of the House of Commons and the Crown."[2] The justification of England's attitude lay in the fact that, while the Alliance had been formed with the definite purpose of safeguarding the new order in Europe from the peril of a revolutionary France, the autocratic Powers sought to convert it into a bulwark of conservatism, *a barrier against all progressive movements.*

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 10.

[2] Stapleton, *Canning and his Times*, 369.

---

[1] Canning's opinion of Metternich was equally uncomplimentary. In 1825 he wrote to Lord Granville: "You ask me what you shall say to Metternich. In the first place you shall hear what I think of him—that he is the greatest r—— and l—— on the Continent, perhaps in the civilized world": Stapleton, *Canning and his Times*, 427.

[2] *Ibid.* 374.

1823 — *The awakening of the nationalities.*

In asserting the rights of nationality Great Britain helped to liberate a mighty force of whose potentiality she was at the time supremely unconscious. Her policy was opportunist, caring solely for what seemed practical and expedient, and eschewing principles which were abstract and theoretical. She rendered no active assistance to the great national movements which shattered the territorial system established by the Vienna Congress in 1815 and remoulded the map of Europe. Yet her defection from the Concert of Europe gave the death-blow to a political system which would have strangled at its birth, or postponed indefinitely, the growth of a national spirit. Almost inevitably, however, British policy involved itself in contradictions which to all appearance were unavoidable. "Our business," declared Canning, "is to preserve the peace of the world"; and, as the means to this, he proclaimed the need of safeguarding the independence of the nations. He could not foretell that the result of the awakening of nationalities would be not only to adjourn the blessings of universal peace, but ultimately to provoke the greatest conflagration the world has yet witnessed. Still, while the dream of a Confederated Europe was finally dissipated after the Congress of Verona, and the effort to govern Europe through a council of the Great Powers was not repeated, the traditions of concerted action in international affairs continued to survive. Europe was henceforth divided into two camps; on the one side the three Eastern Powers, welded together in an alliance avowedly intended to stamp out all revolutionary movements; and on the other side the two Western Powers, the champions of nationality and constitutional principles of government. But, in spite of this division, Europe still remained, as Kaunitz had described it, a family of nations, and its members had too many interests in common for each to plough a lonely furrow. Hence, from time to time, the European Concert reappeared throughout the course of the nineteenth century; and the Great Powers, drawn together in a temporary union by the needs of the moment, imposed their will upon the whole of Europe. Three main problems furnished material for common action: (1) the Eastern

Question, with which we have already dealt; (2) the establishment of the Kingdom of Belgium; and (3) the Polish Question.

Union of Holland and Belgium in 1815.

The union of Belgium and Holland was part of the territorial settlement of 1815. For over two centuries these countries had remained separate from one another. When the Dutch people renounced their allegiance to Philip II., they severed their connexion with their southern neighbours, who continued under the rule of Spain, until they were annexed first by Austria, and then by France during the French Revolution. The collapse of the Napoleonic Empire liberated Belgium from French control, but the Allies treated it as conquered territory to be disposed of as best they pleased. Austria refused to burden herself again with an outlying province so much exposed to French aggression,[1] and sought compensation in North Italy. Castlereagh, therefore, proposed that Belgium should be incorporated with the Kingdom of the Netherlands under the sovereignty of the House of Orange. "The establishment of a just equilibrium in Europe," it was explained, "demanded that Holland be constituted so as to be in a position to maintain its independence by its own resources." What this meant was that a new State must be established on the north-eastern frontier of France strong enough to hold in check a French attack. The celebrated Eight Articles laid down the conditions of the Union. Among other provisions, the two countries were to 'amalgamate' as one State; religious equality was guaranteed as well as complete reciprocity of commercial rights and constitutional privileges; and the public debts of both provinces were made a common charge on the State treasury. So far as the union of two distinct entities can be cemented by diplomacy, nothing was left undone to weld the Low Countries into a consolidated State. It is also fair to remark that the Union had greater prospects of success than historians are wont to recognize. Admittedly,

---

[1] "We wished to remove our country from direct contact with France, and thus put an end to the wars which had been in consequence of this contact perpetually occurring between the two neighbouring Empires": Metternich, *Memoirs*, i. 264.

1815–30 it was a defiance of the principle of nationality; it linked together two different races, two different religions, two different languages, perhaps most important of all, two different sets of traditions. There was, however, another side to the picture. The union of the two countries threw open to the Belgians the free navigation of the Scheldt, and gave them access to the Dutch colonial possessions. As a result, "Belgium made great advances in material prosperity. The means of communication by road and canal were greatly improved. The mineral resources of the country were developed. Flourishing iron, wool, and cotton manufactures were established. Liége, Ghent, Verviers and other places became thriving industrial centres; and, owing to the extensive colonial and foreign markets thrown open by the Dutch connexion, the volume of Belgian trade kept growing year by year. The southern provinces had thus from the material point of view every reason to be satisfied with the results of the Union; and there can be but little doubt that, by the exercise of wise and conciliatory statesmanship, the friction which was certain to attend the compulsory fusion of two peoples might have been greatly diminished, so that in process of time Belgian and Hollander might have been taught to recognize that the political and commercial advantages of Union were worth the sacrifices and the concessions required from each for the common good. But this was not to be."[1]

Causes of Belgian discontent.

A variety of causes combined to bring about the Revolution of 1830. Holland, with a population of two millions, and Belgium, with a population nearly twice the size, were represented in the States-General by an equal number of deputies. The political inferiority of the Belgians was brought home to them by the fact that Belgian deputies who held office under the Government voted with the Dutch, thus giving Holland a majority in the Chamber. Administrative inequality between the two countries was even more marked. The heads of public departments, the civil service, the diplomatic profession, the higher military commands, were recruited in the main from the Dutch people. This unwise discrimination between Belgian and Hollander, which was as impolitic as it was unjust, furnished legitimate ground for complaint; but the opposition raised by the extreme Catholic party to the principle of religious equality was less commendable. The thorny problem of language, as was inevitable, also provoked acute dissensions. The Belgians are divided into Flemings (Flanders and Brabant) and Walloons (Hainault, Namur, and Liége). The former comprise two-thirds of the population, and their language is almost Dutch; the speech of the latter, on the other hand, resembles French. The Dutch language had, therefore, the prior claim to become ultimately the national tongue of the new Netherland State; but the attempt to make it by compulsion the official language of Belgium added fuel to the racial conflict. The arbitrary treatment of the press widened still further the breach between the northern and southern provinces. The right of free discussion was expressly guaranteed by an article of the Constitution, but in practice it received scanty recognition, and heavy penalties were inflicted upon those who ventured to attack the Government's policy. This conduct, so far from silencing hostile criticism of the administration, sharpened its shafts, and an incessant agitation was carried on by Belgian writers. But no action of the Government excited deeper resentment than its financial policy. Holland had contracted an immense national debt, and the Belgian people were compelled to share half the burden. This seemed indefensible enough in the eyes of the Belgians, and the situation was not improved by the nature of the new taxes levied to meet the national deficit. One was a tax on flour, that is, on bread; the other on meat; in other words, the taxes affected the two primary necessaries of life. Nothing more oppressive and injudicious could have been devised. The taxes came home to every class of the community, more especially the poor, and they served to inflame the minds of the whole nation against the supremacy of the Dutch.

---

[1] G. Edmundson, "The Low Countries" in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* x. 524-5.

Under the influence of these various factors Belgian public opinion gradually crystallized in a form definitely antagonistic to Holland. The cleavage between north and

1830 — *The Revolution of 1830.*

south steadily deepened. The two political parties of Belgium, the Clericals and the Liberals, were fused together for the moment in a national party, and minor differences were sunk in the face of the common peril. The Belgians were still loyal at heart to the Union, for the economic benefits derived from the Dutch connexion had contributed materially to the industrial development of Belgium. Their programme was, therefore, not the dissolution of the Union, but administrative autonomy. A vigorous agitation sprang up everywhere, and the public unrest was voiced in the multitude of petitions presented to the States-General. Unfortunately King William, while endowed with many excellent qualities, had an obstinate and unyielding disposition. Conscious of good intentions, and actuated by a real desire to promote the welfare of his subjects, he was not inclined to give way to the unreasoning clamour, as he thought it, of a few unruly agitators. In these circumstances the news of the French Revolution (July 1830) found the Belgians in a mood ripe for revolt. The performance of an opera at Brussels on the night of August 25 gave the signal for insurrection. The theme of the opera was the Neapolitan struggle for independence, and the crowded audience was completely swept off its feet by a wave of revolutionary passion. Without premeditation a riot ensued and rapidly assumed the proportions of a revolution. The army under the Prince of Orange was repulsed in an attempt to enter Brussels, which had been barricaded by its inhabitants, and the moral effects of this defeat were momentous. The insurrection spread like lightning over the whole country, and a provisional Government forthwith proclaimed the independence of the Belgian State. A National Congress was held on November 10, and the task of drawing up a Constitution was immediately taken in hand.

Attitude of the Powers.

The Powers, hitherto passive spectators, now began to bestir themselves. King William appealed to them to restore a Union established at their own instance and guaranteed by their own solemn declarations. Ten years earlier the appeal would have met with a ready response; but the international situation was no longer what it had

1830 — been in 1820. The European Confederation was now completely shattered, and Europe stood arrayed in two opposing camps. The reactionary Powers would gladly have intervened on behalf of the King of Holland to crush the Revolution; but the hands of Russia and Austria were tied by the outbreak of the Polish insurrection, and Prussia was too weak to cope single-handed with France and England. The Western Powers were thus left in possession of the field, and their sympathies were on the side of Belgium. Louis Philippe knew that it would be impossible for him to retain possession of his throne if, in defiance of French public opinion, he allowed Prussia to suppress the new Belgian State; he therefore announced his intention to resist by force of arms the coercion of Belgium. In this resolute policy he was supported by the anxiety of the British Government to avert a European war, which was recognized as inevitable if France and Prussia came into collision over the Belgian Question. A Conference of the Powers was held in London; and, as the outcome of its deliberations, the union of Holland and Belgium was dissolved, Luxemburg was restored to the House of Orange, and about half the national debt was assigned to Belgium. This settlement, called the Protocols of January, was accepted by King William, but bitterly repudiated by the Belgian National Congress. The controversy raged more particularly over the disposal of the grand duchy of Luxemburg. The duchy had been assigned to the House of Orange in 1815, in return for the sacrifice to Prussia of its ancestral territories. But Luxemburg had sent representatives to the National Congress, and the Belgians were loth to surrender their hold over it. Not only did the Belgian Assembly reject the conditions imposed upon it by the European chancelleries, but—in express defiance of their determination to exclude a French prince from the Belgian throne—it offered the crown to the Duke of Nemours, second son of the French King. It was an unpardonable offence in the eyes of the French people that Louis Philippe declined for his son the proffered dignity. He was well aware that Europe would not allow a French dynasty to rule in Belgium, and he wisely

1831 — shrank from a war which could only have one issue. Eventually a candidate acceptable to the Powers was discovered in Prince Leopold of Saxe-Coburg, who became King of the Belgians in July 1831.

Difficulties in the way of a settlement.

To conciliate his new subjects, Leopold prevailed upon the Powers to modify the terms of settlement embodied in the Protocols of January. The new conditions, known as the Eighteen Articles, made valuable concessions in favour of Belgium. Luxemburg remained in Belgian possession; and, instead of an equal division of the national debt, Holland was required to discharge the liabilities she had contracted prior to the Union. This revision of the Protocols, which had been pronounced fundamental and irrevocable, gave King William a pretext for disavowing the whole settlement. He saw clearly that he would gain nothing by passive acquiescence in the decisions of the Powers, and he was burning to wipe out the stain of former reverses. At the head of 36,000 men the Prince of Orange marched into Belgium. The Belgian army, as yet almost completely unorganized, was compelled to fall back before the invaders; and Leopold's tenure of power seemed likely to be short-lived. The advance of the invaders was checked, however, by French intervention, and the Dutch, having successfully asserted the superiority of their arms, withdrew from Belgian soil. Belgium now paid the price of defeat. The Eighteen Articles were superseded by a fresh settlement (the Twenty-Four Articles), which gave to Holland as compensation Limburg and all but the Walloon, or western, portion of Luxemburg. William, who had set his heart upon regaining possession of the whole of Luxemburg, which he considered his rightful territory, persisted in his demand for better terms. There was, therefore, no alternative but to employ coercion. A French force captured Antwerp, hitherto occupied by a Dutch garrison, and the fleets of England and France blockaded the Dutch coast. Holland submitted to pressure, and suspended hostilities with the southern kingdom (1833). But the Dutch King still refused to acknowledge the independence of Belgium; and the situation was really left unchanged, for Luxemburg and

1839 — Limburg remained in Belgian hands. This condition of affairs lasted for five years, when William suddenly announced his acceptance of the Twenty-Four Articles, and demanded possession of Luxemburg and Limburg. Belgium deeply resented the enforced sacrifice, but the Powers were resolved to settle the Belgian Question once and for all, and they supported the claims of the Dutch Government. In return Holland recognized the independence of Belgium, and so the way was paved for friendly relations between the Northern and Southern Netherlands. In this manner a new sovereign State was added to the state-system of Europe, and its neutrality was placed under the solemn guarantee of the five Great Powers.[1]

The present condition of the Poles in:

We have seen how the dormant sense of nationality was awakened in the Belgian people by the pressure of alien rule. The Poles were also one of the submerged nationalities of the nineteenth century, but the resurrection of Poland still lies in the future. At the present day the Polish people number some 20 millions, of whom 5 millions are ruled by Austria, 3½ millions by Germany, and the rest by Russia. We may glance at their present condition in (1) Austrian Poland, (2) Prussian Poland, and (3) Russian Poland, before we turn to trace the history of the ill-starred Polish insurrections.

(1) *Austrian Poland.*

(1) Nowhere in Eastern Europe is the position of the Poles so favourable as in Galicia. At the time of the *Ausgleich*[2] (1867), the Austrian Poles were granted a Constitution which has made them to all intents and purposes autonomous. Their language is the official language of the country, and their Diet enjoys a full measure of political power. This generous policy has converted the Austrian Poles into contented subjects of the Habsburg monarchy. It is in striking contrast with the ill-considered policy which has sought to repress Polish nationality in Russia and Prussia. The population of Galicia, however, is not exclusively Polish—only 53 per cent. in fact are Poles, and

---

[1] Luxemburg was neutralized by the Great Powers in 1867.

[2] *Supra*, p. 155.

1873–1914

43 per cent. are Ruthenians. The former constitute the majority in Western Galicia, which contains the important town of Cracow; the latter, chiefly peasants, form the majority in Eastern Galicia (Ruthenia), which includes Lemberg. This ethnological division of Galicia foreshadows yet another racial problem. To-day there are no less than four million Ruthenians, and it is said that the spread of education is gradually awakening in them a feeling of national self-consciousness.[1] Austria, which subsists largely by playing off her polyglot races one against the other, has recognized the Ruthenian tongue as an official language even in schools, and has also conceded the establishment of a Ruthenian University. The development of national feeling among the Ruthenians is stimulated by the fact that in language, race and religion they are akin to the Little Russians, dwelling immediately across the Russian frontier. The two halves of the Ruthenian race, Ruthenia and Little Russia, are beginning to hold out hands to each other across the artificial barrier which separates them; and a common name, Ukraine, is coming into vogue. For the moment, the Ruthenians fix their hopes upon the acquisition of a Diet which will liberate them from the rule of their 'Polish masters.' But they also contemplate the day when the whole Ruthenian race, comprising thirty million people, will be gathered together under the ægis of an independent Ukraine State.

(2) *Prussian Poland.*

(2) During the past forty years Prussia has pursued in the Eastern Marches a policy of compulsory nationalization. As the Magyars of Hungary have endeavoured to Magyarize all the neighbouring races, so Prussia has attempted to Germanize the Poles in the Eastern Marches, the Danes in North Schleswig, and the French in Alsace-Lorraine. This policy, which originated with Bismarck, was based on the erroneous idea that the best way to consolidate an empire is to establish a dead level of uniformity. "No consideration for the Polish people," wrote Prince von Bülow, "must hinder us from doing all we can to maintain and strengthen German nationality in the former Polish domains. . . . In the struggle between nationalities, one nation is the hammer

---

[1] N. Hill, *Poland and the Polish Question* (1915), 186.

and the other is the anvil ; one is the victor and the other the vanquished." In 1873 Bismarck ordered that German should be the only language used in schools, except for religious teaching. Thirteen years later began the system of expropriating Polish landowners and importing German colonists. The result was a profound disappointment for the German Government. "As an increase in the percentage of Germans," von Bülow has admitted, "was what Bismarck aimed at, our policy and in particular the work of colonization must be considered to have failed." In less than a quarter of a century (1886–1906) the Government had settled 90,000 Germans on Polish soil, but the Polish population had risen by 200,000. The value of land also went up owing to extensive purchases of property by the Government, and the native owners reaped the benefit. At the same time the Poles, in self-defence, formed co-operative associations and set up saving and lending banks. This has not only strengthened their economic powers of resistance, but has given a stimulus to their sense of nationality. Within recent years the policy of expropriation has been carried a stage further. The Government discovered that only German proprietors were willing to part with their land, and the Expropriation Law of 1909 has empowered it to compel Polish landowners to sell their estates. Finally, the Law of Associations (1908) dealt yet another blow at the Polish language ; it ordered the exclusive employment of German at all public meetings other than those held during elections, except where more than 60 per cent. of the population were ignorant of German—even this concession was limited to a period of twenty years. Nevertheless, in spite of their stringency, these provisions have equally failed to achieve their end. "The Polish language," observed a German professor in 1914, "gains not only in the country districts, but in the towns as well, and even in the capital of Posen. The Polish middle class grows, while the German decreases."[1] These results of German policy in Prussian Poland expose the

---

[1] E. Barker, *The Submerged Nationalities of the German Empire* (1915), 17.

1815 — unwisdom of the view that a State is strengthened by the compulsory assimilation of its various national elements.

(3) *Russian Poland.*

(3) The condition of the Poles in Russia is very much the same as their condition in Germany; and they object no less to the policy of Russification than to the policy of Germanization. This policy lies at the root of Polish unrest. Russian is the language of public business and Government schools and colleges, and the country is administered by Russian officials. On more than one occasion the Poles have made a strenuous bid for independence, and their struggle for freedom occupies a striking chapter in the history of the nineteenth century.

The Polish problem and the Vienna Congress.

The Polish problem had engaged the attention of the Vienna Congress in 1815. As a result of the three Partitions (1772–95), Russia had annexed three-fourths of Poland, and during the War of Liberation (1813–15) she also seized possession of the grand duchy of Warsaw, created by Napoleon out of the Polish territory originally assigned to Austria and Prussia. The Emperor Alexander was anxious to retain the duchy in his own hands, and undertook to restore the Kingdom of Poland under Russian suzerainty. Castlereagh feared the aggrandizement of Russia, and strenuously combated the Emperor's proposal. His policy has been severely criticized; but, whatever its errors, it was not conceived out of want of sympathy with Polish aspirations. "I represented," he wrote of an interview with Alexander, "that most certainly the British Government would view with great satisfaction the restoration of Poland to its independence as a nation, but that they took a broad distinction between the erection of a part of Poland into a kingdom merged in the Crown of Russia, and the restoration of the whole into a distinct and independent State. . . . If the question of restoring Poland was to be stirred at all . . . *it ought to be taken up upon a broad and liberal basis.*"[1] From the point of view of Poland, however, this policy was a profound mistake. It was fundamentally wrong to undo the work of Napoleon and destroy once again the unity of the Polish nation. Moreover a homogeneous Polish State, even under the dominion of Russia, would have had a greater chance of holding its own against Russian bureaucratic oppression. Instead of this, the duchy of Warsaw was broken up, and Polish territory was once again incorporated with Austria and Prussia.

---

[1] Castlereagh's official despatches are printed in *Transactions of the Royal Historical Society*, Third Series, vii. 70 *seq.*

Alexander I. and Poland.

Disappointed in his hope of restoring the original Polish Kingdom, Alexander yet persevered in his intention to set up a Kingdom of Poland. The new Polish Constitution was not devoid of grave defects, but in some respects it was in advance of other European Constitutions. The Crown was vested in the Emperor of Russia. The legislature consisted of two houses, a Senate and a Chamber of Deputies, the former composed of Imperial nominees, the latter containing representatives of the nobility and deputies elected under a franchise more liberal than the French. The Polish language became the official language, and civil and military appointments were confined to Polish citizens. Poland was thus erected into an autonomous State, and the nationality of the Polish people was fully recognized. The experiment, however, was a disastrous failure, though there is a conflict of opinion as to the reason. One historian ascribes its want of success to the Poles themselves "It had been always . . . the fatal weakness of the Polish national movement that it was directed in the interests of a dominant caste rather than of a whole people. . . . Clearly, had the Poles cared more for the good of their country than the privileges of their caste, they could have used the tolerable liberties conceded to them to weld together . . . a national force strong enough, if occasion should arise, to assert itself against the domination of the foreigner. But instead of trying to make the best of a not very bad bargain, the Diet proved by its attitude of indiscriminate obstruction that an organized conspiracy existed to make Russian rule impossible. The Tsar soon grew discouraged, and . . . began to take precautionary measures."[1] A Polish historian,[2]

---

[1] Phillips, *Modern Europe*, 203.

[2] S. Askenazy, "Poland" in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* x. 448. Cf. also Lord Eversley, *The Partitions of Poland* (1915), 281 *seq.*

1815–30 on the other hand, exonerates the Poles from blame. "The worst misfortunes which fell upon this country . . . were all due to the intervention" of Novosiltsoff, the 'evil spirit' of Poland, who poisoned Alexander's mind against the new State. One source of the trouble between Russia and the Poles was the extravagant hopes—more particularly the promise to concede the Lithuanian provinces, which had formed part of the original Polish Kingdom—which 'the coxcomb Tsar,' as Byron called him, raised without satisfying.

"The coxcomb Tsar,
The autocrat of waltzes and of war! . . .
Now half dissolving to a liberal thaw,
But hardened back whene'er the morning's raw;
With no objection to true liberty,
Except that it would make the nations free.
How nobly gave he back to Poles their Diet,
Then told pugnacious Poland to be quiet."

Breaches of the Constitution. Whatever the explanation, whether it was the intractable disposition of the Poles, or Alexander's conversion from Liberalism to the creed of Metternich, the liberties of Poland were gradually curtailed and resulted in a growing estrangement between the two countries. The first breach in the Constitution was the establishment of a censorship of newspapers and books (1819). The next step was to suspend the Diet for a period of five years (1820–25) in punishment for its outspoken criticism of the Government. Even in Alexander's lifetime the Polish Charter of Liberties appeared likely to be short-lived, and the probability developed into a certainty after the accession of Nicholas I., the inflexible opponent of all free institutions. Secret societies sprang up, and a military insurrection was on the point of breaking out as early as 1828, during the Russo-Turkish War, when the unexpected difficulties of the campaign were severely taxing Russia's resources. *The Polish insurrection of 1830.* Two years later followed the French Revolution, and its effect upon the Poles was profound. The discovery that Nicholas intended to employ the army of Poland in a war against France decided the Polish conspirators to take instant action, for in the absence of the Polish army any attempt at insurrection was bound to meet with disaster. On the night of November 29, 1830, a rising took place in the capital. The movement was badly organized and could have been suppressed with the greatest ease, but the Viceroy, the Grand Duke Constantine, was seized with panic and fled from the city. Warsaw was left in the hands of the insurgents, and the revolution rapidly became general throughout Poland. A provisional Government was set up under the dictatorship of General Chlopicki, a Napoleonic veteran, who showed himself thoroughly unequal to the demands of the situation. He entered into long and fruitless negotiations with Nicholas, during which he lost an admirable opportunity for organizing the insurrection on a really effective basis. The Russian army was unprepared, and a vigorous offensive in Lithuania would not only have furnished a valuable recruiting-ground, but might have changed the fate of the whole campaign. The revolution, however, was ill-managed from the start. Its leaders were incompetent, irresolute, and divided among themselves. Meanwhile, Nicholas was pushing on his own preparations with the utmost energy, and at the beginning of February the Russian commander, Diebitsch, crossed the Polish frontier. Even yet the situation might have been retrieved, but the vacillation and dilatory tactics of the Polish generals threw away every possible chance of success. In September the Russians entered Warsaw, and a few weeks later the revolution had been stamped out in every part of the kingdom.

The attitude of the European Powers.

The Poles had relied upon the prospects of European intervention, but their hopes were doomed to disappointment. Prussia was unreservedly hostile. "Saved, if ever country was, by the voluntary impulse of the people, why is it that the Government of Prussia," asked Canning in 1825, "is of all Governments the most ostentatiously anti-popular in its politics?"[1] Austria's attitude was equivocal. Her anxiety to weaken Russia was neutralized by the fear of a Polish rising within her own borders, and, after toying with the idea of accepting the Crown of Poland for an Austrian archduke, she finally allowed the war to take its own course. In England and France public opinion was loud in support of the Poles, but Louis Philippe was not disposed to risk his throne in a quixotic crusade against the vast autocratic power of Russia, and the English Government adhered steadfastly to its policy of non-intervention. After the revolution had been suppressed, Palmerston remonstrated with the Russian Government against the extinction of the Polish Kingdom as a flagrant violation of the public guarantees of 1815. Nicholas, flushed by his victory over the Poles, turned a deaf ear to England's protest, and ruthlessly set to work to obliterate every vestige of Polish independence. Poland, deprived of a separate national existence, was henceforth merged in the Russian Empire. Her free institutions were abolished; the administration was flooded with Russian officials; the Russian tongue was erected into the official language of the country; and the army was incorporated with the Russian imperial forces.

---

[1] Stapleton, *George Canning and his Times*, 465.

Parties in Poland.

The policy of Russification was carried on with relentless vigour for a quarter of a century. With the accession of Alexander II., however, the dawn of a new era seemed at hand. The oppressive rigour of the Government was immediately relaxed; the exiles of 1831 were recalled from banishment; and the national movement, which had received a powerful stimulus from the Crimean War, once more reared its head. The Poles were divided into two sections, the 'Reds' and the 'Whites.' The former—the Polish Revolutionary party—felt for Russia the deepest hatred, for in their eyes she was the cause of all the woes of Poland. The latter—the Conservative party—were willing to effect a reconciliation with Russia on the basis of the Constitution of 1815. Outside these parties, there was a handful of politicians whose programme was more modest in its aspirations, but at the same time infinitely more practical. Their representative was the Marquis Vielopolski, whose influence prevailed with Alexander II. to adopt a policy of conciliation. Vielopolski was appointed head of the civil administration, while the Grand Duke Constantine, the Emperor's brother, who had strong Liberal sympathies and was well disposed towards Poland, was created Viceroy. Various concessions were made in deference to Polish national pride, but the Poles were irreconcileable. Their disaffection had been recently increased by the suppression of the Polish Society of Agriculture, founded to ameliorate the condition of the Polish serfs, and also by the provocation of the Cossacks who had fired upon unoffending demonstrations. Vielopolski's well-meant efforts at pacification were, therefore, powerless to soften the obduracy of his countrymen. The 'Reds' replied to his overtures by repeated attempts upon his life, and upon that of Constantine. The 'Whites' would accept nothing less than the Constitution of 1815, and refused to support the Government on any other terms. Vielopolski was moved to an indignant outburst: "I neither ask for nor desire assistance from you or from any one else," he told a 'White' deputation. "It is possible to do some good *for* the Poles sometimes, but *through* them never." In spite of brave words, however, the consciousness of failure was forced upon him, and the discovery that the revolutionary leaders were secretly weaving the nets of a conspiracy over the length and breadth of Poland drove him to a fatal step. To forestall a revolt, he attempted to seize as conscripts for the Russian army all who were suspected of complicity in political agitation. The majority made good their escape to the forests, where they organized themselves in bands. A few days later (January 21, 1863), the Revolutionary party gave the signal for insurrection and appointed a dictator. The struggle which ensued was remarkable even in the history of Poland. The prospects of success were infinitesimal. In 1830 the Poles had control of the army and the Government. In 1863 they had neither one nor the other; they were even without arms. Yet in the face of overwhelming odds they kept up a guerilla warfare for the space of several months, and their heroic resistance was only finally extinguished in March 1864. Once again the Poles displayed their inveterate national qualities, their bravery, their tenacity, their intractability.

The insurrection of 1863.

1863 — The movement was directed by a secret committee of five members, whose identity was hidden even from the very instruments which executed their commands. This secret Government wielded throughout Poland an authority more universally obeyed than the imperial Government itself, backed though it was by a victorious army.

The international situation in 1863.

The international situation in 1863 was hardly more favourable than in 1830. The attitude of the Powers towards the Polish Question remained unchanged. Prussia, under the guidance of Bismarck,[1] promptly seized the occasion to conclude a convention with Russia, which secured the western frontier against attack ; a second time she revealed herself the relentless enemy of Polish ambitions. Austria, willing to wound yet afraid to strike, oscillated between a policy of intervention and a policy of severe detachment. In England the Poles were always assured of popular sympathy. In France the Clericals and Liberals united in support of an insurrection, commended to the former as a Catholic revolt against religious persecution, and to the latter as a national revolt. Napoleon and the English Government therefore made a half-hearted attempt to intervene on the strength of the Treaty of Vienna (1815) ; but, as they were not prepared to enforce their protests by an appeal to arms, the negotiations were fruitless. The Poles were left to fight single-handed against a great military empire, and the outcome of so hopeless a struggle was from the first a foregone conclusion.

Emancipation of the Polish peasants.

Under the inspiration of Nicholas Miliutin, one of the principal authors of the Edict of Emancipation,[2] Russia now embarked upon a new policy. Every insurrection in Poland had been the work of the nobles, who were unable to reconcile themselves to the loss of the turbulent independence they had once enjoyed. The country was still in the grip of the feudal system, and the nobles, who owned all the land, had the right to exact compulsory labour from their serfs. With the prestige and economic independence of a large landowner, the Polish noble also combined various political functions. He administered police and justice on his

[1] *Supra*, p. 71.

[2] *Supra*, p. 93.

1864 — own estate, for the control of Russian officials did not extend into rural districts; and in addition he wielded the vast influence of the Catholic Church, which was in deadly enmity with the Russian Orthodox Church. The hatred of the serfs for their masters had wrecked every Polish movement, and Miliutin's project was to deepen the cleavage in Polish society in order to make the feud irreconcileable. The law of 1864 accomplished for Poland what the Edict of Emancipation had accomplished for Russia. It elevated the serf into a free peasant proprietor owning the land he occupied, and relieved him of all obligation to work upon the lord's estate. It left him, moreover, with an undefined right of access to the noble's forest-land and pastures, with a view to perpetuating friction in the rural communities. At the same time a system of village communes was established to support the newly acquired independence of the peasant against pressure from without. The authority of the Polish aristocracy was thus completely undermined, and a new force was raised up to serve as the buttress of Russian power in Poland. A serious blow was also dealt at the Catholic Church, most of its monasteries being dissolved and their land confiscated. In this way it was hoped to destroy the two irreconcileable enemies of Russia, the aristocracy and Catholicism.

Recent developments.

This economic revolution has been succeeded by an industrial revolution. The commerce of Poland has grown by leaps and bounds. The population of the large towns has increased enormously, and immense factories have sprung into existence. The vitality of the Polish national spirit, however, is still undiminished. The repression of the Polish language, the exclusion of Poles from the administration, in short, the whole policy of Russification and bureaucratic oppression, have been a signal failure. At the opening of 1914 the prospects of an autonomous Polish State appeared wildly remote. But time brings its revenges. Upon the outbreak of war the Russian Government pledged itself to the restoration of Poland. The proclamation, which enshrines its promise in an imperishable record, may serve as a fitting close to this chapter.

1914 — "Poles! The hour has struck in which the sacred dream of your fathers and forefathers may find fulfilment.

"A century and a half ago the living flesh of Poland was torn asunder, but her soul did not die. . . .

"May the boundaries be annihilated which cut the Polish nation into parts! May that nation reunite into one body under the sceptre of the Russian Emperor! Under this sceptre Poland shall be reborn, free in faith, in language, in self-government.

"One thing only Russia expects of you: *equal consideration for the rights of the nationalities to which history has linked you.*"

CHAPTER VIII

THE NEW ERA

(1871–1914)

1871

Character of the period 1871-1914.

In the history of Western Europe the year 1870 marks the end of the great formative movements which created the German Empire, the Kingdom of Italy, the Third Republic, and the Dual Monarchy. The period which follows is barren of political achievements, and the confused panorama of events makes it difficult to give a coherent and intelligible account of recent developments. An era of consolidation necessarily lacks the dramatic qualities which stir the imagination and hold the attention of observers; and the parliamentary annals of the different European States are devoid of general interest. In the present chapter we shall deal only with those aspects of the past forty-five years which possess special importance for European history, namely, the foundation of the French Republic, the consolidation of the German Empire, the formation of the Triple and Dual Alliances, the Eastern Question, and the *Weltpolitik* of Germany.

Deposition of Napoleon III. (1871).

The foundation of the French Republic in 1870 was the result of the Franco-Prussian War. Condemned on the ground that he was "responsible for the ruin, invasion, and dismemberment of the country," Napoleon III. paid the penalty, in the overthrow of his dynasty, for the crowning disaster which he had brought upon France. Although the Emperor maintained the fiction that his empire rested on the will of the people, its real support had always been the army, and the destruction of the imperial forces therefore exposed it to all the hazards of revolution. In their hour of need the French people recalled how they had been saved from invasion in 1792 by a republican form of government, and they reverted to the traditions of the Revolution in the hope that history would repeat itself.

Peace of Frankfort (1871).

It is important to observe that the Republic of 1870, unlike the Republic of 1848, was not imposed on the nation by the democracy of Paris; it was proclaimed in the provinces before the news was known of what had taken place at the capital.[1] The Third Republic was thus erected on a broader basis than its predecessor, a fact which largely accounts for its greater stability and permanence. After the fall of the Empire, a Government of National Defence assumed the task of driving the German army from the soil of France. "We will give up," said Jules Favre, Minister of Foreign Affairs, "neither an inch of our territory nor a stone of our fortresses." The conduct of the war was taken over by Léon Gambetta, who threw himself into the work of national reorganization with all the burning energy of his indomitable personality. But his gallant efforts proved unavailing to save the capital, and a National Assembly met at Bordeaux to determine the question of peace or war. Voicing the wishes of the nation, it accepted the heavy terms dictated by Germany in order to bring to an end a disastrous conflict. The moment peace was concluded, the old party feuds which had lacerated France for two generations again reappeared, and the country was given over to all the horrors of civil strife.

The place of Paris in French history.

Throughout French history Paris has always been something more than the capital of France; as Freeman has pointed out, it was also the kernel round which France has grown. Hence, from the earliest times, Paris has been accustomed to impose its will upon the French people, and the French people have been accustomed to look to Paris for guidance and inspiration. This largely explains the disturbed course of French constitutional development from 1789 to 1871, for whoever made himself master of the capital was forthwith master of the provinces. The significance of the Paris Commune, whose fortunes we have now to trace, lies in the revelation which it afforded that France was no longer willing to accept dictation from her capital. In the struggle between the Parisian democracy and the National Assembly, the triumph of the latter gave the death-blow to the pretensions of a single town to dominate France. At the same time it afforded convincing proof that insurgent democracy has been rendered powerless against a well-organized State owing to the resources with which science has endowed modern Governments. 1871 —

---

[1] Seignobos, *Contemporary Europe*, i. 187.

The Paris Commune (1871).

From the first moment of the outbreak of war Paris showed itself in a mood ripe for insurrection. The weakness of the central authorities, deprived of the forces upon which their power alone rested, relieved the city of the pressure which had kept in check for two decades the old revolutionary passions. Once this pressure was removed, it became evident to skilled observers that only the successful prosecution of the war could silence hostile criticism of the Administration. Instead of victory, however, disaster followed disaster with appalling rapidity; and the discontent of the Parisian population was fanned to fever heat. When the National Assembly ratified the terms of peace, the indignation of those who demanded war to the knife, knew no bounds; and the Revolutionary deputies at once resigned their seats in an "Assembly which had surrendered two provinces, dismembered France, and ruined the country." In the eyes of the extreme war-party the cession of Alsace-Lorraine was a betrayal of the country, while it was also believed that the Republic itself was in danger. Owing to causes which will be recounted later, the majority in the National Assembly was composed of monarchical elements, and it was naturally distrusted by the advanced Republicans. Nor did the Assembly itself exhibit the tact which might have conciliated opposition. It wounded the pride of the Parisians by holding its sessions at Versailles, and it exasperated them still further by its wanton disregard of their material interests. During the siege the payment of rent and other financial obligations had been suspended, and the Assembly refused to prolong the *moratorium* in spite of the economic dislocation still prevailing in the capital. It also

1871 — suppressed the pay of the National Guard, although this was the sole support of those whom the war had deprived of their ordinary occupation. The National Guard had been allowed to retain their arms after the entry of the Germans into Paris, and they made common cause with the insurgents. The starting-point of the insurrection was the attempt of the authorities to seize some cannon in the possession of the National Guard. The attempt failed, and the Government immediately retired to Versailles, leaving the city in the hands of their opponents (March 18).

The Communist programme.

Paris was now governed by two bodies: a 'General Council of the Commune,' elected by all the inhabitants of the capital, and a Central Committee representing the National Guard and serving as a link between the militia and the Council. Although the Communists adopted the old republican calendar, and the red flag, the symbol of the Socialist party, they seem to have had no social programme. Only a few members of the Council, in fact, were at all concerned with social reforms. On the other hand, the municipal programme of the Communists marked a great advance upon the principles of local government rooted in France for nearly three-quarters of a century. In 1791 the leaders of the French Revolution had established a system of almost complete decentralization, conferring extensive powers of self-government upon the local communes. But the Jacobins, in order to drive back the Prussian and Austrian armies from their soil, reverted to the traditions of the *ancien régime,* obliterating all vestiges of local autonomy and setting up a form of government more rigidly centralized than any France had yet known. This system of centralized administration was maintained and elaborated by Napoleon I., and it continued, with modifications in detail, throughout the nineteenth century. The Communists, discarding the fundamental principles of Jacobinism, now proclaimed that every town had the right to enjoy complete self-government. "What does Paris ask for?" they said in their *Declaration to the French People.* "The recognition and the establishment of the Republic, and that the absolute autonomy of the 'Commune' should prevail everywhere in France."

All Communes were to exercise "the rights inherent in the Commune: the right of voting the Communal budget; of fixing and apportioning the taxes; of controlling the local services; of organizing the magistracy, internal police, and education; of administering the Communal property; of choosing public officials by election or competition, with permanent right of dismissal; of organizing the National Guard, which should elect its own officers, and should be the sole guardian of order." These self-governing Communes were to be united in a Federation, whose delegates would constitute the central Executive. But the experiment of Communal Federalism was destined never to receive a trial. The army of the National Government, recruited largely from French prisoners whom the Germans had set free, laid siege to Paris and gradually penetrated into the city. Then followed what has been described as the fiercest civil war of the century—the so-called 'Bloody Week' (May 21-28). "Room for the people, for the bare-armed fighting men," ran one of the Communist proclamations. "The hour of the revolutionary war has struck. . . . After the barricades, our houses; after our houses, our ruins." A struggle of the most savage description ensued. The insurgents were massacred without even the pretence of trial; and at least 20,000 Parisians are said to have perished. In addition the councils of war, which sat for no less than five years, sentenced over 13,000 persons, of whom 7500 were transported to New Caledonia, while others were condemned to death or penal servitude. This was a flagrant violation of French usage, which distinguishes between common-law criminals and political rebels. The advanced Republican and Socialist party, exhausted by the terrible vengeance exacted by the conquerors, ceased to exist; its enemies exterminated it by the same methods of proscription employed with fatal effect in Rome during the last days of the Republic, and in France during the Reign of Terror.

It is rare that anything is said in favour of the Paris Commune.

Victrix causa deis placuit, sed victa Catoni.

1871

Criticism of the Commune.

The Communist movement is generally looked upon as a suicidal act of madness, a piece of gross treason to France, the more discreditable since the country was in the hands of the enemy. Yet against the view that the "demagogues" of Paris saw in the misfortunes of their country nothing but "an excellent opportunity for establishing their own authority,"[1] must be set the fact that the Communists were fighting, as they thought, to defend the Republic whose safety seemed endangered by the monarchist Assembly at Versailles. The root of the trouble lay in the profound mistrust which the Parisians entertained against the "men of Versailles." In its broadest aspect, however, the Paris Commune was the natural culmination of a series of unexampled commotions which had brought the capital to the brink of madness. It was the outcome of an explosion of popular fury unparalleled even in French history—an explosion due to the disasters of the war, the loss of territory, the long siege, and the triumphal march of the Germans through the city.

The Compact of Bordeaux.

The interest of French internal politics during the next few years lies in the gradual consolidation of republican institutions. The struggle between those who favoured a republic, and those who upheld the cause of monarchy, was fought out in the parliamentary arena, and for a long time it was doubtful which party would prevail. The Assembly had been elected to make peace, and on this account the country districts voted for Royalists, except in those departments in the south-east which had been invaded by German armies. The impression was widespread that a republican Assembly would carry on war to the knife, and Royalists were therefore chosen, not on the strength of their political convictions, but as the opponents of the extreme war-party. In this way 400 Royalists found seats in an Assembly composed of 750 deputies, and there seemed every reason to suppose that France would once again revert to a monarchical form of government. But in French politics it is the unexpected that happens; and an Assembly whose sympathies were monarchical was destined to be the instrument

---

[1] Phillips, *Modern Europe*, 483.

1871 — which founded the Republic. Of this surprising event several explanations may be hazarded. The Assembly had been elected for the sole purpose of deciding peace or war, and it had received no mandate to frame a Constitution; it would therefore have been an act of madness, so long as France was occupied by the enemy, to provoke acute party dissensions by proclaiming the monarchy. At all costs it was necessary to preserve national unity in the face of the gravest national emergency conceivable. The Royalists enjoyed a majority in the Assembly, but they dared not bid defiance at this stage to the strong Republican minority. Moreover, the history of the restored Bourbon monarchy had taught the lesson that a dynasty which started on its career by ceding national territory was likely to be short-lived. It seemed more expedient, therefore, that the task of concluding peace should devolve upon the Republic rather than upon the new king, who would be fatally handicapped if the first act of his reign was the surrender of French provinces. On these various grounds the Assembly decided to postpone for a time "the decision of France as to the definite form which her Government should take"; and all parties agreed to a political truce—the Compact of Bordeaux—by which constitutional questions were left for a time in abeyance.

Establishment of the French Republic.

It was fortunate for France that she possessed in Thiers a statesman whose force of personality, signal capacity, and wise moderation, admirably qualified him to guide the helm of State in this unparalleled situation. He was now the most popular man of the hour as the result of his opposition to the war in 1870, although his attitude at the time had been deeply resented by the nation. At heart Thiers was an Orleanist, but he placed his country before party, and threw all his energies into the effort to establish "such a Government as would create the fewest divisions." Appointed 'Chief of the Executive,' he defined his task as one of "pacification, reorganization, the restoration of credit, and the revival of industry." How well he succeeded in this task is shown by the fact that the enormous indemnity exacted by Germany — two hundred million

1873–1883 pounds—was paid off in two years. In spite of this great achievement, which freed France from the occupation of German armies, and afforded the world a striking testimony of the recovery of French credit, Thiers was unable to maintain his position as Chief Magistrate. In proportion as the work of recuperation steadily advanced, the enemies of the Republic redoubled their efforts to bring about a Royalist restoration. But though they succeeded in overthrowing Thiers in favour of Marshal MacMahon (1873), they found themselves no nearer their goal. Their impotence to effect the restitution of the monarchy was owing to the failure of the different monarchical groups to formulate a common programme. There were three claimants to the throne: the Comte de Chambord, the grandson of Charles X.; the Comte de Paris, the grandson of Louis Philippe; and the Prince Imperial, the son of Napoleon III. Yet, as Thiers reminded his opponents, there was only one throne and it could not have three occupants. This rivalry between the Legitimists, the Orleanists, and the Imperialists, ruined the cause of monarchy, and the throne remained vacant because the Royalists were divided in their allegiance. A ‘fusion’ of the two parties, the Legitimists and Orleanists, was nearly effected on the understanding that ‘Henri V.’ (Comte de Chambord), who was childless, should be succeeded by the Comte de Paris, but the uncompromising refusal of the Comte de Chambord to accept the tricolour flag, which he looked upon as the symbol of revolution, defeated the project. He was resolved to sacrifice the throne rather than surrender the white flag of the *ancien régime*, with its implied renunciation of the principles of divine right and uncontrolled sovereignty. A restoration of the monarchy in these circumstances was manifestly impossible, and the formal recognition of the Head of the Executive as President of the Republic (January 30, 1875) was a virtual adhesion on the part of the Assembly to the Republican ideal. A few years later (1883), it was expressly enacted that “the Republican form of government cannot be made the subject of a proposal for revision.” Henceforth the Republic was placed outside the arena of political strife.

1870 — *Character of the Third Republic.*

In its final shape the Republican Constitution was the work not of one party, but of all. It was essentially a compromise, in which are mirrored all the manifold phases of French historical development. It has preserved the social organization bequeathed by the Revolution, and the centralized administrative institutions inherited from the Empire, while the actual distribution of political power represents a compromise between autocracy and popular sovereignty. This peculiar feature of the Republican Constitution doubtless accounts in a large measure for its stability. There is also another, and more important, explanation of the fact that for nearly half a century the French people have enjoyed a continuous political life. Every revolution in France has been the work of Republicans. On the first three occasions[1] their influence did not extend beyond Paris and the large towns, and the revolution was followed sooner or later by a Royalist reaction. On the fourth occasion (1870) the Republican ideal was found to have taken root in the nation at large, and only the accident which gave the monarchical parties a majority in the Bordeaux Assembly delayed the immediate proclamation of the Republic. Hence revolutions automatically ceased when the Republicans, the one party organized for this purpose, had finally accomplished their object.[2]

Internal Consolidation of the German Empire.

For Germany, as for France, the war of 1870 marked the opening of a new epoch. The year which saw the foundation of the French Republic witnessed also the birth of the German Empire. We have described in a previous chapter the steps by which Bismarck achieved the unification of Germany and created a great military monarchy in Central Europe. But as yet the new State existed only in an embryonic form; it lacked a corporate political existence; and the task of endowing the Empire with the necessary legal and financial institutions was fated to absorb the energies of German statesmen for a generation to come. It was fortunate for the German people that the statesman who had been the architect of their Empire was enabled to

---

[1] Namely, 1792, 1830, and 1848.

[2] Cf. Seignobos, *op. cit.* i. 224.

1870 — preside over its destinies for no less than twenty years. We may condemn his methods, but we cannot deny the genius of the man who in the short space of eight years accomplished the federal union of Germany. Nor was any one more fitted than Bismarck to complete the work which he had so auspiciously begun. The prestige he had gained as the Maker of Germany was in itself an enormous asset in helping him to grapple successfully with the problems which confronted the infant State; and he brought to the task qualities of mind which enabled him to overcome the obstacles to unity and to counteract the forces of disruption. Moreover, no one knew better than Bismarck the real weaknesses of the structure which he had called into existence. He had to build up a German national State on federal foundations, and the obligation to conciliate the prejudices of the Southern States was the more insistent since Bavaria and Würtemberg had only accepted the union with the greatest reluctance. It is impossible to say how much opposition Prussia has actually encountered in her direction of German affairs, for the proceedings of the *Bundesrath*, in which the different Federal Governments are directly represented, are shrouded in secrecy; but it is unlikely that the relations between Prussia and the Southern States have been invariably adjusted with ease.

The submerged nationalities of Germany.

Apart from the difficulty of overcoming the separatist tendencies of the individual States, and reconciling their claims with the needs and requirements of the supreme Federal Power, another obstacle to internal consolidation lay in the fact that the German Empire contained non-German elements. The 'submerged nationalities,' incorporated against their will in a political community with whose language and traditions they have nothing in common, are the Poles of the Eastern Marches, the Danes of North Schleswig, and the inhabitants of Alsace-Lorraine. The Poles number 3½ millions, the Danes 150,000, and the inhabitants of Alsace-Lorraine 1,800,000; while the total population of Germany at the present day is 65 millions. Of the condition of Prussian Poland we have already spoken,[1] and the policy of compulsory assimilation pursued in the Eastern Marches has also been attempted among the Danish inhabitants of North Schleswig. In the Treaty of Prague,[1] Prussia had undertaken at the instance of Napoleon III. to restore the population of North Schleswig to Denmark, if a plebiscite of the inhabitants decided in favour of union with the northern kingdom. This article of the Treaty remained a dead letter; and, in spite of the lapse of half a century, the Danes have not become reconciled to their position. This is hardly inexplicable in view of the fact that Prussia has sought to prohibit the Danish language and to expropriate Danish owners of the soil. The character of the treatment meted out to Alsace-Lorraine has varied considerably. The population of Alsace is largely German, that of Lorraine is largely French; and it is commonly said that Bismarck—while determined to annex Alsace and Strassburg, 'the gate into Germany'—would have been willing to relinquish Lorraine and Metz, 'the gate into France,' but for the pressure brought to bear by the military party. However this may be, the Germans have not succeeded in assimilating their acquisitions, and their policy has alternated between conciliation and coercion.[2]

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 236.

Domestic problems.

The submerged nationalities, however, were too weak numerically to be a serious menace to the German Government, though they have undeniably been a source of weakness. The real dangers which threatened the stability of the young State lay in other directions. It is noteworthy that both the German Empire and the Conservative Republic founded by Thiers were confronted by the same enemies, Clericalism and Socialism. The history of the struggle waged by Bismarck, first with the Roman Catholic Church, later with Social-Democracy, will best enable us to grasp the nature of the problems which attended the birth of the new political order.

The Roman Catholic Church enjoyed in Germany extensive powers. It was almost entirely free from the control of the State, and was allowed to administer its own affairs

---

[1] *Supra*, p. 74.

[2] Barker, *The Submerged Nationalities of Germany*, 23.

1871 — *The Catholic Centre.* without interference. It also wielded considerable influence over the laity, which revealed itself in the creation of a political organization devoted to the interests of the Church, and known as the Centre. In the *Reichstag* of 1871 the Centre counted 58 seats, a number which was increased to nearly 100 three years later. This growth of clerical influence disquieted the Government, which found itself face to face with a serious parliamentary opposition, for the Centre soon developed the most uncompromising hostility to Bismarck's policy. It included in its ranks the *Grossdeutschen*—the party of Greater Germany—who wished to incorporate in the German Empire all German elements, that is, the eight million Germans in Austria now irrevocably severed from their kinsfolk. They were unreconciled to the displacement of a Catholic by a Protestant House as the ruling dynasty in Germany; and, as the Catholics were now in a minority in the Empire, the instinct of self-preservation impressed upon them the need for firm political discipline. One plank in the platform of the clerical party was the restoration of the temporal power of the Pope, a proposal which endangered the friendly relations established by Bismarck with the Italian kingdom. The Centre also allied itself with the parties of national, or dynastic, 'protest.' It supported the demand of the Catholics of Posen (Prussian Poland) that the Polish language should be taught in elementary schools; and it countenanced the Guelphic nobility of Hanover, who deeply resented the expulsion of the 'legitimist' king, and the 'usurpation' of the Hohenzollern line. Bismarck, therefore, resolved to break up a party whose policy seemed inimical to the best interests of the Empire.

The Kulturkampf. To destroy the Centre it was necessary to strike at the hierarchy from which its existence was derived. If the Roman Catholic Church were reduced to complete dependence upon the State, its political power would be automatically extinguished. In these circumstances a struggle between Church and State lay in the nature of things, and the exact direction given to the conflict was perhaps more the result of accident than of conscious policy. The dogma of

Papal Infallibility, decreed by the Council of the Vatican in 1870, flung an apple of discord into the midst of German Catholics. Many Catholic professors and teachers protested against the doctrine, and refused to teach it in the Universities and schools. Between the 'Old Catholics'—as these dissidents were termed—and the Roman hierarchy strife was soon provoked; and, as the controversy grew ever more embittered, it became impossible for the Government to remain a passive spectator. In this way began the *Kulturkampf*, the struggle for civilization, as it was called, against clerical reaction. In order to force their opponents to their knees the Roman Catholic bishops sought to expel them from the theological faculties of the Universities and from the schools under their control; they also punished the Old Catholics with excommunication and with the refusal to perform the marriage ceremony for them. Bismarck interpreted these measures as a challenge to the supremacy of the State, and the narrower issues involved in the conflict became merged in the wider problem of the relations of Church and State. His failure to negotiate a settlement with Rome evoked from the Chancellor the famous utterance: "To Canossa we shall not go, either in the flesh or in the spirit."[1] He severed diplomatic relations with the Vatican (1872); wrested the control of education out of ecclesiastical hands by appointing lay inspectors of schools; and made civil marriage compulsory throughout the Empire (1874). At the same time he carried through the famous 'May Laws' (1873–75) which were intended to curtail the authority of the clergy and bring the Roman Catholic Church into complete subjection to the State. It forbade Catholic priests to coerce individuals by public excommunication; it required candidates for the ministry to pass a State examination in general knowledge and to study theology for three years at a German University; it placed Church seminaries under State inspection; and it ordered the compulsory notification of all ecclesiastical appointments. The Jesuits had been excluded from the Empire 1870–75 as early as 1872, and in 1875 all religious Orders were dissolved.

---

[1] An allusion to the submission which the Emperor Henry IV. made to Pope Gregory VII. in 1077.

End of the Kultur-kampf.

There was now open war between the Government and the Catholic hierarchy. Pope Pius IX. condemned the 'May Laws' root and branch, and out of ten thousand Roman Catholic priests in Prussia barely thirty submitted; while in eight hundred parishes religious services were no longer held. During these years Bismarck was in alliance with the National Liberals, whose support gave him a clear parliamentary majority for his measures. But, owing to his abandonment of Free Trade, a schism took place between the Chancellor and his former allies, and Bismarck began to draw near to the Conservative party. He therefore felt the need of conciliating the Catholic Centre, and one by one began to repeal the anti-clerical legislation. His withdrawal from the position which he had taken up at the height of the *Kulturkampf* was facilitated by the accession of a new Pope, Leo XIII. (1878–1903). The net result of the struggle was thus a victory for the Catholic clergy, who regained a large measure of the power of which Bismarck had vainly endeavoured to deprive them.

Social-Democracy.

In abandoning the conflict with the Roman Catholic Church Bismarck was largely moved by the desire to reserve all his energy for combating a new and more insidious foe, which challenged the very basis of the structure he had so laboriously built up. The years in which the Prussian statesman was adroitly laying the foundations of a great military monarchy gave birth to a mighty revolutionary force of immeasurable significance. The founders of Social-Democracy in Germany were Karl Marx, who supplied the working classes with a creed (*Capital*), and Ferdinand Lassalle, who furnished them with an organization (*The Universal German Working Men's Association*). The progress of the new movement was nothing short of marvellous. In 1877 the Social-Democratic party counted nearly half a million adherents, and this startling revelation of their strength precipitated the inevitable crisis. Apart from its economic ideals, the Socialist programme involved the destruction of everything to which Bismarck had devoted his life's work—the strengthening of monarchical institutions against parliamentary encroachment, and the establishment of the German Empire on the basis of 'militarism.' As Prince Bülow, a successor of Bismarck, afterwards wrote: "In the German Empire Prussia is the leading State. The Social-Democratic party is the antithesis of the Prussian State. . . . It will have nothing to do with German patriotic memories which bear a monarchical and military character."[1] Accordingly, in 1878, Bismarck entered upon a policy of violent repression, and carried through the *Reichstag* a measure which aimed at the wholesale ruin of the Social-Democrats. It prohibited all societies, meetings, and publications intended for the propaganda of Socialist principles, and authorized the police to deport any suspected person. During the twelve years in which this Act remained in force no less than 1400 publications were suppressed; 900 persons were deported, and 1500 were condemned to prison. These measures, which robbed the working classes of their political birthright, were powerless to check the spread of Socialism, and in 1890 the party polled a million and a half votes; while at the present day there are as many as four million German Socialists—embracing one-third of the electorate—though their political influence is rendered negligible by the fact that German ministers are not responsible to Parliament. 1878–90 —

State Socialism.

Bismarck was not content to rely solely upon coercion as the means of stamping out the Socialist movement. He was quick to recognize that the strength of the Social-Democratic party lay in the grave economic disabilities with which the industrial classes are burdened, and he sought therefore to wean the masses from their attachment to Socialist doctrines by a policy of remedial legislation. Thus Bismarck was led by force of circumstances to embark upon a system of State Socialism, and his ability to carry out great social experiments in the teeth of all the traditions of *laissez-faire* was a remarkable tribute to his will-power and masterful personality. The theory that the only function of the State is to serve as the policeman of society was now discarded in favour of a more enlightened view as to the

---

[1] *Imperial Germany*, pp. 188, 190.

1872–89 — scope and purpose of the State. As early as 1872 certain German economists, who were known as 'Socialists of the professorial chair' and included in their ranks the distinguished economic historian, Schmoller, had founded a *Union for Social Politics* in which they advocated State intervention in economic affairs. These men helped to mould public opinion and to prepare the way for an epoch-making departure from the tenets of the Manchester School. The praise which Lord Morley has bestowed on Richard Cobden may not unfairly be given to Bismarck in his character of State Socialist. "Great economic and social forces flow with a tidal sweep over communities that are only half-conscious of that which is befalling them. Wise statesmen are those who foresee what time is thus bringing, and endeavour to shape institutions and to mould men's thought and purpose in accordance with the change that is silently surrounding them."[1] The Message from the Throne in November 1881 asserted in memorable terms the obligation of the State to improve the condition of the labouring classes, and its moral duty to remove social evils and to "promote in positive ways the well-being of all its members and more especially of the weak." In pursuance of the doctrine here enunciated, the German Government brought in laws for the insurance of workmen against sickness (1883), against accident (1884), and against old age and incapacity (1889). These laws now affect as many as twenty million people, and the principles they embody have since been widely adopted in other countries. But in so far as they were devised by Bismarck with the idea of allaying discontent and wrecking the Social-Democratic party, they can scarcely claim any appreciable measure of success. Social-Democracy has grown in Germany by leaps and bounds, and in its ultimate triumph appears to lie the best hope for the future political transformation of the German Empire.

Reaction from Free Trade.

No less momentous in its results was Bismarck's economic policy. The conversion of Germany from Free Trade principles was an event of far-reaching importance for the future development of Europe. On the eve of the Franco-

---

[1] Morley, *The Life of Richard Cobden, ad fin.*

1871–79 — Prussian War it seemed as though the whole Continent was about to be united by a common commercial system, and that "the stream of freely exchanging commodities" would, "like the Oceanus of primitive geography, encircle the whole habitable world."[1] The Free Trade movement, victorious in England, had rapidly gained adherents in Continental States, and in the 'seventies Germany became virtually a non-protectionist country. In Bismarck's eyes a "war of cannon-balls" was not so great an evil as a "war of tariffs," and in the negotiations for peace with France he expressly stipulated for the resumption of commercial relations on lines laid down in the commercial treaty of 1862. Nevertheless, eight years later, he recanted his earlier convictions and effected fiscal changes of the most sweeping character. In 1879 he imposed a tariff on foreign corn and foreign commodities. The protective duty on grain was at first light, but afterwards it was greatly increased. The result, while it benefited the agricultural interest, was to alienate the industrial classes and stimulate the growth of Social-Democracy.

Reasons for the reaction.

It is difficult to determine the precise motives which led Bismarck to throw overboard his Free Trade principles. The German Empire had no separate finances, and depended mainly on the contributions of the federated States. One object of the reform of the customs, therefore, was to create for the Imperial Government independent sources of revenue, and relieve it of the necessity to "beg at the door of the States." The demand for the protection of home industries received also a powerful impetus from the grave economic crisis which overtook Germany in the years 1874–1879. The immense war-indemnity extorted from France resulted in a fever of speculation and over-production, and the economic life of the country suffered severely from the inflation of the currency. Viewed from the broadest standpoint, however, the reaction from Free Trade in Germany was the inevitable sequel of that narrow idea of nationality which now unhappily dominated the German mind. The true conception of nationality has been formulated by

---

[1] Morley, *op. cit.* (ed. 1910), 808.

1871–90 — Mazzini: "In principle, nationality ought to be to humanity that which division of labour is in a workshop—the recognized symbol of association; the assertion of the individuality of a human group called by its geographical position, its traditions, and its language, to fulfil a special function in the European work of civilization." The very antithesis of this conception is the belief that the conflict of nationalities "is a law of life and development in history."[1] The corollary of the German view of nationality is Mercantilism, the system of national policy which interprets progress in terms of Power and jealously seeks to combat the progress of other States. But whatever the reason, the result of the abandonment of Free Trade has been to deepen the cleavage which divides the nations of Europe, and to retard indefinitely their harmonious co-operation in "the European work of civilization."

Effect of the Franco-Prussian War on Europe.

After the overthrow of the Napoleonic Empire the international situation was completely changed. Europe found that she had lost a mistress, but had gained a master.[2] The centre of European gravity shifted from Paris to Berlin; and under the guidance of Bismarck the German Empire established a virtual hegemony over the Continent. This result was achieved not by an ostentatious parade of armed force, but by the exercise of those diplomatic qualities in which the great Chancellor showed himself without a peer. Upon his fall from power in 1890, German foreign policy assumed a new direction, and William II. and his advisers embarked upon the adventurous and perilous course of *Weltpolitik*. The prudence and foresight of Bismarck's policy appear all the more striking in the light of subsequent developments.

Aim of Bismarck's foreign policy after 1870.

The Franco-Prussian War left behind it embittered memories. The French people refused to accept the verdict of Sedan as final, or to regard the loss of Alsace-Lorraine as irrevocable; and their hopes for the future were expressed in the single word *revanche*. Hence, as a German historian has remarked, "from the very outset the new structure of the German Empire was burdened as it were by a French mortgage, since every foreign foe could henceforth reckon unconditionally on French support." Bismarck's own attitude towards France was set forth in a letter to the German ambassador at Paris: "We want France to leave us in peace." He harboured no ill-feelings towards the young Republic; and in the hope of diverting the thoughts of the French nation from a war of retaliation, and turning away their eyes from "the gap in the Vosges," he even sought to occupy them with colonial enterprises. But he was well aware at heart that the breach between the two countries was irreparable; and the unexpected rapidity with which France recovered from the disasters of 1870, coupled with the swift reorganization of her military forces, gave additional weight to the warning publicly uttered by Moltke. "We have earned in the late war respect, but hardly love. What we have gained by arms in six months we shall have to defend by arms for fifty years." In these circumstances Bismarck bent all his energies to the task of isolating France in Europe. "We have to prevent France finding an ally," he wrote. "As long as France has no allies she is not dangerous to Germany."

---

[1] Bülow, *Imperial Germany*, 240.

[2] Rose, *The Development of the European Nations*, 153.

Bismarck's relations with Austria.

It was in the successful accomplishment of this design that the German Chancellor revealed his consummate statecraft. Germany had now attained the period of 'satiation' (1871–1890); when, flushed with her military triumphs and territorial acquisitions, she was content to rest on the laurels she had gained. Abandoning the aggressive policy which had now served its purpose to the full, and alive to the necessity of disarming the fears of Europe aroused by the victories of Königgrätz and Sedan, Bismarck had henceforth no other aim than to safeguard the Empire from attack. Throughout the course of the Franco-Prussian War his mind had been haunted by the fear that a European coalition would intervene at the last moment to wrest the fruits of victory from his grasp. Italy, as he was well aware, was bound by ties of gratitude to the French people; Austria meditated revenge for her expulsion from the Germanic

1872 — Confederation; and even Russia, whose friendship at this critical moment alone saved Germany from Austrian intervention, was becoming uneasy at the sudden rise of a great military Power on her flank. At the time circumstances had favoured Prussia, and she was left free to wreak her will upon France. But the danger of an anti-German coalition still remained, and Bismarck set to work to build up a strong defensive position and to convert the potential enemies of the new Empire into its firm allies. His adroit tactics achieved the end he had in view. In his overtures to Austria he reaped the benefit of the statesmanlike moderation with which he had treated her in the hour of triumph. The Habsburg monarchy ceased to cherish the hope of regaining its former ascendancy in Germany; it was fast becoming an Eastern Power and finding an outlet for its ambitions in the Balkan Peninsula. In its trend eastward it needed the support of Germany against the Slav races, for Russia in particular was not likely to view with equanimity Austrian intervention in a sphere marked out as her own preserve.

His relations with Russia.

At the outset Bismarck also managed to effect a good understanding with Russia. From the earliest years of the nineteenth century Prussia and Russia had maintained intimate relations, and the personal friendship existing between Emperor William I. and his nephew, the Tsar Alexander II., was a pledge of political concord. The prospects of a permanent alliance were strengthened by the fact that, however divergent their interests in other directions, on one point their interests were identical. It was an easy task for Bismarck to persuade Austria and Russia that the revolutionary unrest manifested in the Paris Commune, German Social-Democracy, and Russian Nihilism threatened the structure of autocracy in all monarchical countries alike. He exploited the fears of the Conservative Powers in order to build up another Holy Alliance. In 1872 the three Emperors met at Berlin and entered into a political understanding, though there was apparently no written agreement. This 'understanding,' or *entente*, is usually known as the League of Three Emperors, but the term is misleading.

No actual treaty was concluded, but the three Eastern Powers agreed to work together for "the maintenance of the boundaries recently laid down, the settlement of problems arising from the Eastern Question, and the repression of revolutionary movements in Europe." The German Chancellor was able to say with truth: "I have thrown a bridge across to Vienna, without breaking down that older one to St. Petersburg." The visit of King Victor Emmanuel to Berlin in the following year was a token of Italy's friendly attitude; and the isolation of France was thus rendered complete.

The Austro-German Alliance (1879).

The re-opening of the Eastern Question in 1875 introduced a new factor into the situation. The German Chancellor had deprecated any rivalry between Russia and Austria "over the fragments of nations that people the Balkan Peninsula," but the old conflict of interests was revived by the rising in the Herzegovina. At the Congress of Berlin (1878) Germany co-operated with Austria, which was allowed to occupy Bosnia; and Russia was violently incensed at the 'ingratitude' of the Power to whom she had rendered signal services in 1870. The *entente* of the three Emperors was rudely shattered, and the Russian Government demanded that Bismarck should withdraw his support from Austria or forfeit the friendship of Russia. The result was a re-grouping of the Powers. Russian statesmen began to make overtures to France, while the German Chancellor concluded a formal alliance with the Austrian Empire (1879). The Austro-German Treaty, whose terms were not disclosed till 1887, provided that if either Austria or Germany were attacked by Russia, they would assist each other with all their forces; but in the event of an attack by any other Power, the allied country would remain neutral unless the attacking Power received Russian support. Bismarck thus reversed the traditional course of Prussian foreign policy, substituting an Austro-German alliance for the friendship of Russia. His policy was acceptable to the nation at large, which was bound to Austria by ties of blood, and would have shrunk from a union with the Slav races against their kinsfolk as "a moral impossibility."

1882 — *Formation of the Triple Alliance.*

The accession of Italy to the Austro-German Alliance converted it into a Triple Alliance. It was a master-stroke of policy on Bismarck's part to include the southern kingdom in the Germanic constellation, and drive through Central Europe a wedge which interposed an insuperable barrier to the effective union of the extremities. The achievement was the more remarkable since the Latin State had nothing in common with the Teutonic Powers, one of which blocked the path to the complete unification of the Italian race. The memories of Austrian oppression were still fresh in the minds of the people, and the hostility to Austria was fanned by the Irredentist agitation. The *Italia Irredenta* movement for the ' redemption ' of the Tyrol and other Italian-speaking districts could only attain its end at the expense of the Habsburg monarchy. Hence the Triple Alliance had in it no elements of real permanence ; in the words of an Italian historian it was " tacitly accepted, but not loved," and it was scarcely likely to survive the strain of a European war. Bismarck himself, although he strove to effect a *rapprochement* with Italy, entertained great doubts as to the possibility of success. As late as 1880 he wrote : " We have much more ground to fear that Italy will join our adversaries than to hope that she will unite with us, seeing that we have no more inducements to offer her." Yet two years later (May 1882) Italy entered the Triple Alliance for a term of five years ; and the compact was renewed at intervals. Two reasons in the main account for Italy's association with the Central Powers. To begin with, the occupation of Rome had created a feud between the Vatican and the Quirinal which endangered the stability of the Italian monarchy. The Papacy refused to be reconciled to the extinction of its temporal power, and the recrudescence of clericalism under the Third Republic kept alive the fear that French bayonets might once again restore Papal rule in Rome. This danger gradually passed away as the clerical party in France lost ground, but an evil destiny conspired to keep apart the two sister Latin nations. As the presence of French soldiers in Rome had served to retard for ten years (1860–70) the completion of Italian unity, so the French seizure of Tunis in 1881 baulked Italian plans for expansion in North Africa. Italy, forestalled by French diplomats and disappointed in her colonial ambitions, threw herself into the arms of Germany, and nourished bitter resentment against France, which was also fed by a tariff war. At the end of the century a better state of feeling grew up, and the French ambassador at Rome voiced the feelings of both countries when he declared, in 1902, "that a conflict between the two Latin nations was no longer possible."

Bismarck and Russia.

In spite of his intimate connexion with Austria, Bismarck sought to preserve friendly relations with Russia. In his hands the Triple Alliance was not an aggressive instrument excluding all possibility of goodwill towards other Powers; and he steadily maintained a Conservative attitude in European politics. It was an axiom of his policy to keep France and Russia apart. The Treaty of Tilsit, in which Napoleon and Alexander I. joined hands in order to rule the world between them, had proved short-lived, but the danger of its renewal on a more solid basis had been ever present to the minds of German statesmen from Metternich to Bismarck. So long as Bismarck controlled the destinies of Germany he was able to hinder a *rapprochement* between the Western Republic and the Eastern Empire. In 1884 the three Emperors met once again at Skiernewice, where they renewed their old understanding and agreed that if any one of them made war on a fourth Power, the other two would observe a friendly neutrality. This compact expired after three years, but it was revived in the form of a secret "Reinsurance Compact" between Germany and Russia.

Formation of the Dual Alliance.

The fall of Bismarck in 1890 modified the European situation; its immediate result was to liberate France from the isolation in which the veteran statesman had held her for two decades. The "Reinsurance Compact" came to an end in 1890, and William II., who had ascended the throne of Germany in 1888, refused to renew it. He thus abandoned one of the cardinal principles of Bismarckian statecraft, and so directly promoted the formation of the

1870–87 Dual Alliance. Ever since the war of 1870 the current of events had been steadily flowing in the direction of an alliance between France and Russia. This had been advocated in the early part of the nineteenth century, notably by Richelieu and Polignac, ministers of the Bourbon kings. But the Polish insurrections of 1830 and 1863 rendered the idea of an understanding with Russia repugnant to the instincts of the French people, and it was only the inexorable logic of circumstances which gradually drew together the autocracy of the East and the democracy of the West. The loss of Alsace-Lorraine converted France into the irreconcilable enemy of Germany, and the desire to wipe out the stain of national humiliation overpowered every other consideration in her mind. She recognized also that a union with Russia would dissipate her dangerous isolation and afford a solid guarantee against an unprovoked attack on the part of her neighbours. On her side Russia had every motive to make advances to the French Republic. The rise of the German Empire had been a great blow to Russian pride, for the incontestable superiority of her military forces made Germany henceforth the predominant State in Europe. "We need a powerful France," became for the future a maxim of Russian policy; and in 1875 Russia and England had intervened to avert the danger of an outbreak of war on the Western front. It was the Eastern Question, however, now as always, which shaped the course of events. The rivalry of Austria and Russia in the Balkans forced Bismarck to display his hand, and the support which he gave to the Habsburg State was the real occasion of the breach between the Cabinets of Berlin and Petrograd. From this moment onwards an alliance between Russia and France was only a matter of time. In 1887 it was openly stated that "henceforth Russia will watch the events on the Rhine, and relegate the Eastern Question to the second place. The interests of Russia forbid her, in case of another Franco-German war, observing the same benevolent neutrality which she previously observed." The adroit statesmanship of Bismarck, combined with Alexander III.'s distrust of French democracy, continued for some years to delay the Franco-Russian *entente*; but two circumstances hastened its final consummation. In 1888 French financiers came to the support of the Russian Government, and immense Russian loans, amounting within six years to £160,000,000, were successfully floated at Paris. In 1890 Bismarck fell from power, and his successors proceeded to inaugurate new lines of policy. The next year the French fleet visited Cronstadt and received an official welcome from the Tsar. A Russian squadron made a return visit to Toulon in 1893, and the Tsar and the President exchanged telegrams, the former alluding to "the bonds which unite the two countries." It is uncertain whether any definite agreement was concluded on this occasion; but at any rate there was now a Franco-Russian understanding. After the death of Alexander III., who entertained all his life an abiding hatred of Western institutions, the relations between France and Russia were placed on a firm basis, and the year 1895 witnessed the formal inauguration of the Dual Alliance.

The 'Armed Peace.'

The international situation at the close of the nineteenth century can best be described in the words of the famous rescript of the Emperor of Russia convening a Peace Conference at The Hague in 1898. "The preservation of peace has been put forward as the object of international policy. In its name the great States have concluded between themselves powerful alliances; the better to guarantee peace, they have developed their military forces in proportions hitherto unprecedented, and still continue to increase them without shrinking from any sacrifice. All these efforts, nevertheless, have not yet been able to bring about the beneficent results of the desired pacification. . . . In proportion as the armaments of each Power increase, do they less and less fulfil the objects which the Governments have set before themselves. Economic crises, due in great part to the system of armaments *à outrance* and the continual danger which lies in this accumulation of war material, are transforming the armed peace of our days into a crushing burden which the peoples have more and more difficulty in bearing. It appears evident, then, that if this state of things continues, it will inevitably lead to the very cataclysm which it is desired to avert, and the horrors of which make every thinking being shudder in anticipation."[1] This cataclysm was suspended over the heads of the European peoples, like the sword of Damocles, for nearly half a century, and all attempts to effect a "reduction of the excessive armaments which weigh upon all nations" were unavailing. The Hague Conferences held in 1899 and 1907 accomplished useful work, but the main purpose for which they were convoked remained unfulfilled, and nothing was done in the way of "putting a limit to the progressive development of the present armaments." The countries of Europe found themselves involved in a vicious circle from which there seemed no outlet or possibility of escape. Every State protested its love of peace, yet continued to prepare for war, and justified its own 'defensive' preparations on the ground of the 'hostile' preparations made by its neighbours. The complex events which finally brought the 'Armed Peace' to an end in 1914 belong to the history of the twentieth century, and a brief account is all that can be attempted here. The two main threads which give the clue to recent international developments are (I.) the Eastern Question, and (II.) the *Weltpolitik* of the German Empire.

Events leading up to the War of 1914.

I. The Eastern Question.

I. After the Congress of Berlin (1878) the Eastern Question remained dormant for thirty years. The energies of Russia were absorbed in the Far East; Austria was occupied in consolidating her hold upon Bosnia; while the young Balkan States were slowly and painfully learning to solve the domestic problems incidental to their national growth. Throughout this period the destinies of Turkey were in the hands of Abdul Hamid II. (1876–1909), whose astute diplomacy played on the jealousies of the European Powers and skilfully averted the danger of concerted action between them. The weakness of the Ottoman State had long been a commonplace in the Chancelleries of Europe, just as its methods of government had long been a byword; and on three occasions in the nineteenth century the Turkish Empire seemed on the point of dissolution.[2] On each

---

[1] Holls, *The Peace Conference at the Hague*, 8.

[2] 1829, 1856, 1878.

1908
—

occasion Turkey managed to weather the storm, but not without suffering loss of territory, and her dominions in Europe steadily diminished. At the end of the century it was no less evident than it was at the beginning that the Turk was very ill; and to those who looked beneath the surface there were unmistakable signs that the process of disintegration was still at work. To remedy this condition of affairs a party of Turkish reformers, imbued with Western ideas, sprang into existence. The programme of the 'Young Turks,' as they were called, was both constitutional and national. Their aim was to breathe new vitality into the worn-out Turkish State, and maintain unimpaired the integrity of the Ottoman Empire. They carried on a secret propaganda in the army, and the Sultan suddenly found himself bereft of the instrument by which alone his despotism was supported. A bloodless revolution took place in Constantinople on July 24, 1908, and in order to save his throne Abdul Hamid restored the Constitution established in 1876 but afterwards abrogated. The new regime soon disappointed the hopes raised in Western Europe that Turkey had entered the ranks of constitutional States and would abandon the evil traditions of 'Abdul the Damned.' The experiment of constitutionalism proved an unqualified failure. "From the very beginning," remarks an eye-witness, "there was no honest and loyal effort made to apply even the most rudimentary principles of constitutional government. . . . The Young Turks, embodied in the Committee of Union and Progress,' merely continued the despotism of Abdul Hamid. They were far worse than Abdul Hamid, however, for they were irresponsible and unskilled."[1] The root of the mischief, however, was that the Turks pursued a policy of aggressive nationalism—the very policy which has been the bane of Eastern Europe. "The Empire was to be regenerated, not by humanizing it, but by Ottomanizing it."[2] Within a short space of time it was ecognized that the revolution in Turkey not only affected he destinies of the nationalities ruled by the Ottoman State,

---

[1] H. A. Gibbons, *The New Map of Europe* (1914), 174-5.
[2] Forbes, Toynbee, Mitrany, Hogarth, *The Balkans* (1915), 366.

1908 — but also had a grave European significance. The Eastern Question suddenly entered on a new and acute phase, and the current of events then set in motion led directly to the Great European War of 1914.

Annexation of Bosnia-Herzegovina.

The first result of the Young Turk revolution was the annexation of Bosnia-Herzegovina on October 7, 1908. Austria-Hungary had been in occupation of the two provinces for over thirty years, and it must have been evident that she would never relinquish her grasp over them except at the point of the sword. Undeniably her constructive policy had effected great material improvement. She had created roads, railways, and public buildings, and a reasonable case could be made out in favour of Austrian administration by those who contend that order and good government "should be the aim of practical statesmen in the Near East rather than exclusive attention to the doctrine of nationalities." It is probable that the Dual Monarchy would have remained content with its virtual sovereignty over Bosnia without the formal repudiation of Ottoman suzerainty. But the rejuvenation of Turkey, and the militant nationalism of the Young Turks who were determined to establish their authority over all the races in the Empire, made Austria alarmed for the security of her Balkan possessions. Her action in changing the status of Bosnia necessarily wore an aggressive appearance. It was a breach of international law, and a direct challenge to the Serbian people. Serbia had always looked forward to the time when she should unite under her ægis the whole Serbian race, and her longing to possess the Serb provinces was deepened by the fact that they were necessary for her expansion to the sea. The action of Austria-Hungary dashed all her hopes of a great Serbian State to the ground, and her indignation knew no bounds. In the tension thus created the outbreak of war seemed imminent, for Russia encouraged the Serbs in their resistance. At length, in March 1909, the German Emperor openly intervened in 'shining armour' on the side of Austria, and the pressure which Germany brought to bear at Petrograd caused Russia to give way. The isolation of Serbia compelled her to bow her

1908 —

head to the inevitable, and she was obliged to make a formal declaration of her submission to the will of Austria. Serbia declared that she was not affected in her rights by the situation established in Bosnia, and would "cease the attitude of protest and resistance which she has assumed since last October, relative to the annexation, and she binds herself further to change the direction of her present policies towards Austria-Hungary, and in the future to live with the latter in friendly and neighbourly relations." This ended the crisis; for the moment the danger of a European war had been averted by Russia's retirement from her championship of the Slavonic cause and by the humiliation of Serbia, but the aggressive activity displayed by the Central Powers was a portent of evil omen for the future.

"The Turk changes not."

In spite of the loss of Bosnia and the Herzegovina, the extent of the Ottoman Empire in Europe still remained considerable. It comprised Macedonia, Albania, Thrace, and the Sandjak of Novi Bazar which separated Serbia from Montenegro. The new constitutional regime effected no change, however, in the system of administration. It has been well said by Sir Charles Eliot that "The Turk changes not; his neighbours, his frontiers, his statute-books change, but his ideas and his practice remain the same. He will not be interfered with; he will not improve." There have been many Turkish constitutions, but "written laws and institutions are merely temporary forms, almost disguises, which clothe for a time without really affecting the vital realities of Turkish rule."[1] The same competent observer has also accounted for the survival of Turkey in the face of universal condemnation of her methods of government:

Why Turkey has survived in Europe.

"The first requisite for an elementary knowledge of the Eastern Question is to understand that Turkey is quite unlike any other country in Europe. . . . In Turkey, not only is there a medley of races, but the races inhabit not different districts but the same district. Of three villages within ten miles of one another, one will be Turkish, one Greek, and one Bulgarian, or perhaps one Albanian, one Bulgarian, and one Serbian, each with their own language, dress,

---

[1] *Turkey in Europe*, by 'Odysseus' (1900), 139.

1908 — and religion. Under favourable circumstances, eight races and languages may be found in a large town; Turks, Greeks, Jews, Armenians, Bulgarians, Serbians, Vlachs, and Albanians.

"Why do these remain each with their own language, customs, and ideals, not as survivals interesting to the learned, but as living realities whose bickerings and jealousies supply the daily round of Eastern politics?" The Turks "are usually thought of as a destructive force, and rightly; they have destroyed a great deal and constructed nothing. But in another sense they have proved an eminently conservative force, for they have perpetuated and preserved, as if in a museum, the strange medley which existed in South-Eastern Europe during the last years of the Byzantine Empire. Their idea of government has always been simply to take tribute and secure the permanent position of the Osmanli. This once recognized, they do not care to interfere with the manners and customs of their subjects, but treat them with a contemptuous toleration. Further, they gained their first footing in Europe in consequence of the dissensions of Europeans. They have always been numerically inferior to the aggregate of their subjects, and could hardly have maintained their rule had the latter ever been able to unite against them. They have thoroughly learned, and still daily put into practice with admirable skill, the lesson of *divide et impera*; and hence they have always done, and still do, all in their power to prevent the obliteration of racial, linguistic, and religious differences."[1]

Macedonia. Nowhere was the confusion of races greater than in Macedonia—the storm-centre of the Balkan Peninsula—and nowhere was the policy of 'divide and rule' pursued with more signal success. The racial problems of Macedonia have long been the despair of European diplomatists. It is the debatable land to which all the Balkan States lay claim, and the mixture of races, religions, and languages contained in it defies analysis. Neither anthropology, nor language, nor history, enables us to decide whether Macedonia as a whole can fairly be described as Bulgarian or

---

[1] *Turkey in Europe*, by 'Odysseus' (1900), 16-18.

Serbian, but both countries have carried on a vigorous propaganda, linguistic and ecclesiastical, among the Macedonian races.[1] The Porte fostered these racial divisions in order to preserve its authority in a land where Turks are a mere handful, and even Roumania was encouraged to recognize in the Kutzo-Vlachs their long-lost kinsmen. The Vlachs are a wandering race, and well-disposed towards the Turks owing to a happy understanding on fiscal matters. "When the tax-collector called, the inhabitants of the villages were never at home, and this simple arrangement was accepted by both parties."[2] To add to the welter of races there is also a considerable Greek population in Macedonian towns. The general condition of Macedonia can better be imagined than described; it is hardly necessary to observe that misgovernment was rife. In the way of reform little or nothing was done, and though Commission after Commission of Inquiry came to curse, they all went back with pockets full of money and reports full of blessings.[3]

The First Balkan War (1912–13).

As a result of the conflicting claims of the Balkan States, Macedonia became the crux of the Eastern Question. The land could not belong to every one, and until the rival claimants had settled the question to their mutual satisfaction, Turkey would continue to remain in possession. The prospects of a Balkan alliance against the common enemy appeared therefore infinitesimal, and yet for one brief moment the impossible was achieved, and to the astonishment of the world a Balkan League sprang into existence. The history of this League is still obscure; it is probable, however, that the Balkan Powers grew alarmed at the fact that the Young Turks were straining every nerve to strengthen their hold upon Macedonia, lest it should share the fate of Bosnia and slip for ever from their grasp. They were also encouraged by the Albanian uprising, and by the action of Italy in waging a war with Turkey for the possession

---

[1] When the propagandist movement flagged, "a bomb would be thrown at, let us say, a Turkish official by an *agent provocateur* of one of the three" interested parties—Bulgars, Serbs, or Greeks—"inevitably resulting in the necessary massacre of innocent Christians by the ostensibly brutal but really equally innocent Turks, and an outcry in the European press": Forbes, Toynbee, Mitrany, Hogarth, *The Balkans*, 66.

[2] 'Odysseus,' *op. cit.* 416.

[3] *Ibid.* 358.

1912–13 — of Tripoli (1911), while Greece knew that only war would solve the Cretan Question. The Great Powers sought to intervene, and warned the Balkan States that they would "not admit, at the end of the conflict, any modification in the territorial *status quo* in European Turkey." But the rapid march of events completely upset all their calculations. In spite of their protest, war was declared on October 17, 1912. According to the plan of campaign formed by the allies, Bulgaria was to invade Thrace, where the main part of the Turkish army would be encountered, and Serbia and Greece were to take the field in Macedonia. Alike in Macedonia and Thrace the Turk met with overwhelming defeat. The Bulgarians captured Kirk Kilissé, won the great battle of Lulé Burgas (October 28–November 2), laid siege to Adrianople, and pressed on to Constantinople. The Greeks entered Salonika (November 9), and their fleet occupied the Ægean Islands; while the Serbians occupied Uskub (October 26), Monastir, and Ochrida (November 18–23). It seemed hopeless to continue the struggle any longer, and the Turkish Government showed itself ready to enter into peace negotiations. On December 3 an armistice was concluded, and two weeks later a Peace Conference commenced to hold its sittings in London. But the war-party at Constantinople gained the ascendancy; and, as a result of a *coup d'état*, the Ministry of Kiamil Pacha was overthrown by Enver Bey, and the commander-in-chief of the army, Nazim Pacha, was assassinated. Hostilities were resumed, and three great Turkish fortresses fell in rapid succession. The Greeks captured Janina on March 5; the Bulgarians entered Adrianople on March 26, and Scutari was taken by the Montenegrins on April 22. In the Treaty of London (May 30, 1913), which ended the First Balkan War, Turkey ceded all her dominions in Europe west of the Enos-Midia line, and also the island of Crete.

The Second Balkan War (1913). No sooner was peace concluded than the allies began to quarrel over the division of the spoils. It is not easy to apportion the responsibility for the Second Balkan War; but it is at any rate clear that part of the guilt attaches to the Great Powers themselves. Austria and Italy were resolved at all hazards to exclude the Serbs and Montenegrins from Albania, upon which they had themselves cast envious eyes, and in order to maintain peace the European Powers brought pressure to bear on the two Serbian States, compelling them to relinquish Albanian territory and in particular the fortress of Scutari. Albania was erected into an independent State, although it is a land hopelessly divided against itself. The hostile attitude of the Powers checked Serbia from gaining an outlet on the Adriatic, and in her disappointment she determined to seek compensation in Central Macedonia. In claiming a larger share of Macedonian territory than had been assigned to her in the original treaty of partition—namely, North Macedonia (Old Serbia)—the Serbian Government repudiated the compact into which it had entered with Bulgaria prior to the war (March 1912). On the other hand, Bulgaria was unwise, in the circumstances, in demanding her full pound of flesh, though it is fair to remember that she had borne the burden of the struggle against Turkey. But Bulgaria proceeded to put herself hopelessly in the wrong by an unprovoked and treacherous attack upon her allies (June 29, 1913). She apparently thought to intimidate them into submission, but the effect of her action was the very reverse. The Serbs and Greeks turned with fury upon their assailants, and were joined by the Roumanians, who seized the opportunity to assert their own claims upon Bulgaria. In the course of this fratricidal strife the Christian populations of the Peninsula showed that they had nothing to learn from the Turks in the way of massacres. The Bulgarians were forced to sue for peace, and the Treaty of Bucharest imposed a new settlement upon the Balkan peoples (August 10, 1913). Roumania, without justification, seized the Silistrian plateau—the districts of Dobrich and Silistria which are admittedly Bulgarian. Not only was her action entirely unprovoked, but "it was a crime that the Jews and Turks of the Bulgarian Dobruja, after years of relative toleration, should be flung back into the social degradation and political slavery of the Jews and Turks" under Roumanian sovereignty.[1] Serbia annexed 1913

---

[1] L. W. Lyde, *Some Frontiers of To-morrow* (1915), 89.

1913-14 — Northern and Central Macedonia, including Uskub, Ochrida, and Monastir. Greece acquired South Macedonia, and a littoral on the Ægean Sea, extending as far as the River Mesta and containing the two ports of Salonika and Kavalla. Bulgaria received a large part of Thrace and Eastern Macedonia, with a few miles of Ægean coast, embracing the port of Dedeagach. It is estimated that as a result of the Treaty of Bucharest " well over a million of admittedly Bulgarian people are now under foreign rule in the Peninsula," [1] while the loss of Kavalla deprived Bulgaria of a natural harbour vital for the economic development of her *hinterland*. At the same time the Turks refused to abide by the Treaty of London, and wrested from Bulgaria the town of Adrianople and a larger part of Thrace. Thus ended the Balkan Wars; and seldom in history have any wars changed their character so completely and so rapidly. " The Balkan War," it has been well said, " began as a war of liberation, became rapidly a war of annexation, and has ended, if all the charges are true, in being a war of extermination." [2] We need add nothing to this description.

Grounds of the quarrel between Austria and Serbia.

The Balkan settlement of 1913 sowed the seeds of the European War of 1914, for it was the determination of Austria-Hungary to tear up the Treaty of Bucharest which was responsible for her ultimatum to Serbia.[3] To understand the grounds of the quarrel between the Dual Monarchy and the Serbian State, it will be well to bear in mind two fundamental facts: (1) At bottom the Eastern Question is an economic question. The expulsion of Austria from the Italian Peninsula diverted the course of her trade-routes from the Mediterranean to the Ægean. It left her with only a single port—Trieste on the Adriatic—and henceforth her cardinal aim was to obtain access to the Levant. The port of Salonika was the goal in the direction of which Austria-Hungary had long been striving, and for whose sake she has been steadily advancing eastwards (*Drang nach Osten*); and the occupation of Bosnia was only the first stage upon the path which was to carry the Dual Monarchy through the very heart of the Balkan Peninsula. On this account the premature collapse of the Turkish Empire in Europe was extremely distasteful to Austria, and to her influence is largely to be ascribed the disruption of the Balkan League, which would have barred for ever the road to the East. The effect of the Second Balkan War proved widely different from what had been confidently anticipated at Vienna and Budapest. It confirmed Greece in her possession of Salonika, and it planted Serbia in Central Macedonia, thus interposing an insuperable obstacle to the forward policy of the Germans and Magyars. To remove this obstacle was therefore one of the underlying motives of the present war. (2) Nevertheless, this is but one aspect of the problem. The root of the trouble between Vienna and Belgrade lies in the fact that Austria has regarded Serbia for some years in the light of a potential Piedmont; and the real issue involved is nothing less than the future of the Slav provinces of the Austrian Empire. More momentous than her territorial gains was the immense prestige which Serbia had acquired as a result of her victories. She was suddenly converted "from a peasant community to the political nucleus of a South Slav Confederacy,"[1] for in the Balkan sun the Serbs of Hungary now saw the dawn of their day.[2] Austria-Hungary began forthwith to reap the fruits of her misdirected policy. On the one hand, the racial tyranny of the Magyars was responsible for that deep-rooted discontent among the Hungarian Slavs, which made them so susceptible to a Pan-Serb propaganda in favour of union with Serbia. On the other hand, the refusal of the Austrian Government to allow the aggrandizement of Serbia in Albania inevitably diverted the stream of Serbian expansion towards its own Slavonic provinces, thus precipitating a conflict which might otherwise have been avoided.

---

[1] L. W. Lyde, *Some Frontiers of To-morrow* (1915), 106.

[2] Sir Edward Grey, quoted in *Nationalism and War in the Near East*, by a Diplomatist (1915), 280.

[3] It was announced in the Italian Chamber, December 5, 1914, that as early as August 9, 1913, Austria invited Italy to co-operate with her in a war against Serbia, but Italy refused.

1914
—

---

[1] *Nationalism and War in the Near East*, by a Diplomatist (1915), 347.

[2] R. W. Seton-Watson, *The War and Democracy* (1915), 152.

1890–1914

II. German Weltpolitik.

II. In its relation to the present war, the Near Eastern Question is only a phase—though a vital one—of a larger movement—the *Weltpolitik* of Germany. The issues involved in the unparalleled conflict now drenching Europe with blood do not merely concern the future balance of power in the Balkan Peninsula; the whole question has been raised as to the position which the German Empire shall occupy in the world of to-morrow. This is the broad historical significance of the Great European War; and it serves to account for the grim tenacity and unswerving determination of those who are engaged in it.

German foreign policy after Bismarck.

Without attempting to pass judgment upon the wisdom of German foreign policy during the last quarter of a century—for all judgment pronounced in the heat of conflict must lay itself open to the reproach of partiality—two things may be safely postulated. In the first place it was a repudiation of the policy pursued by the founder of the German Empire; and Prince Bülow has acknowledged that "voices were raised in protest" when the successors of Bismarck "trod the new paths of international politics, for it was considered a mistake to depart from the approved ways of Bismarck's Continental policy."[1] In the second place it was bound, sooner or later, to bring Germany into collision with other European Powers. In the absence of authentic evidence the historian is groping in the dark when he seeks to lay bare the secret springs of modern diplomacy, and to elucidate the real meaning of contemporary events. Nevertheless the main tendencies of recent German development seem unmistakable.

Comparison of Louis XIV. and William II.

We have already given some account of Bismarck's prudent and statesmanlike policy during the first twenty years of the Empire. The keynote of this policy was moderation. The Iron Chancellor was haunted all his days by the dread of hostile coalitions, and his heart was set on making the Empire secure from attack. In his hands the Triple Alliance was a weapon of defence, and even English statesmen welcomed its formation as a guarantee of European peace. The moment the reins of power fell from Bismarck's hands, an immediate change made itself felt in the conduct of affairs, and the train of events then set in motion led directly to the present conflict. We may observe at this point that there is a striking parallel between France under Louis XIV. and Germany under William II. Under the guidance of her great statesman, Richelieu, France in the seventeenth century became the foremost Power in Europe, a position she achieved as the protector of the small States against the military domination of the Habsburgs. Louis XIV. spoilt the work of Richelieu by carrying it too far, and his aggressive policy combined all Europe in arms against him. In the same way the successor of Bismarck awakened universal apprehension as to his ulterior aims, and this apprehension was deepened by the fact that German nationalism, in the form of militarism, had developed into "the most dynamic force for political disturbance"[1] that existed. Hence what Bismarck had dreaded came to pass; and the instinct of self-preservation which united Greece against Sparta, and Europe against Louis XIV. and Napoleon, was now aroused against the military domination of Germany.

---

[1] Bülow, *op. cit.* 11.

The meaning of Weltpolitik.

The history of German foreign policy after 1890 falls into two well-defined periods; in both the aims were fundamentally the same, but there was a marked difference of method. The dividing line is the Russo-Japanese War (1904), and the revelation of Russia's impotence to crush a small Asiatic Power relieved the German Government of the necessity for the caution it had hitherto displayed. The aims of German policy are usually expressed by the term *Weltpolitik*; and 'world-policy' means, if we accept the interpretation of a German historian, that "Germany has by degrees ceased to regard exclusively the Continent of Europe in framing her policy." This new development, we are told, is "no chance outcome of the personality of a monarch possessed by exuberant schemes of world-conquest, or of the excessive energy of ambitious statesmen, or even of the wild imaginings of small groups of Pan-German enthusiasts without political influence; rather, it forms

---

[1] *Nationalism and War in the Near East*, by a Diplomatist, 373.

1890–1914 part of that strong tide of evolution which irresistibly bore the German State out beyond the bounds of its earlier policy."[1] With the conception of *Weltpolitik* in the abstract, it is hardly possible to quarrel. It is a commonplace that all the chief States of Europe have become World-States, that is, they possess vast territories outside Europe, and their policy is shaped by considerations not purely European. Germany had as much, or as little, claim as her neighbours to a share in the white man's burden—and 'the white man's plunder.' It was unfortunate for her that in the 'scramble for Africa' she was late in the field; but that was the fault—if a fault it was—of Bismarck, who discouraged the idea of colonial expansion. Still, Germany obtained South-West Africa, Togoland, and the Cameroons (1884), as well as New Guinea and the Pacific Islands; and she has made more recent acquisitions. After the disappearance of Bismarck, the idea of a colonial empire was embraced with ardour; and one may agree with Prince Bülow that at the bottom it was not "ambitious restlessness" which led Germany to imitate the Great Powers and embark upon a world-policy, but the exigencies of her economic situation. The industrial and commercial expansion of Germany during the last half century was, indeed, most remarkable. Her population increased from 41 to 65 millions; her foreign trade more than trebled, rising from 300 to 950 millions; her mercantile shipping advanced by leaps and bounds; and she became preponderately an industrial instead of an agrarian State. In short "industry, commerce, and the shipping trade have transformed the old industrial life of Germany into one of international industry, and this has also carried the Empire in political matters beyond the limits which Prince Bismarck set to German statecraft."[2] To obtain fresh and unrestricted markets for German manufactures thus became the fundamental aim of German statesmanship—the incentive to a German colonial empire, and the basis of all German political calculations.

[1] H. Oncken, "The German Empire" in *Camb. Mod. Hist.* xii. 168.

[2] Bülow, *op. cit.* 15.

1890–1914

The Drang nach Osten.

The results of her first colonial experiments gave Germany small occasion for satisfaction. German colonies have been a source of financial weakness rather than strength to the mother country, and in any case they cannot compare in extent or value with those in the possession of her European rivals. Confronted with the fact that the best part of the world was already parcelled out, and that fresh colonies could only be gained at the point of the sword, Germany endeavoured to build up a sphere of commercial influence in other directions. The primary aim of German *Weltpolitik* has been the desire to dominate the Near and Middle East. Bismarck had treated the whole Eastern Question as not worth the bones of a single Pomeranian grenadier, and at the Congress of Berlin he was content to play the part of "honest broker," without reaping any advantages from the settlement then concluded. Over the mind of his successor, on the other hand, the Levant has exercised an irresistible fascination, and the *Drang nach Osten*—the advance eastwards—opened up a new vista fraught with untold possibilities. As British influence at the Porte declined, Germany ostentatiously came forward as the champion of the Ottoman Empire and the Moslem creed. "The three hundred million Mohammedans who live scattered over the globe may be assured of this, that the German Emperor will be their friend at all times." This utterance (1898) seemed to disclose the intention of William II. to utilize the fighting power of Islam in the coming struggle for the mastery of the Orient; and the 'peaceful penetration' of Asiatic Turkey was henceforth the outstanding feature of Germany's commercial expansion. Apart from considerations of world-power, the exploitation of Asia Minor was widely advocated on economic grounds. The well-known economist, Friedrich List, had a long time before recommended colonization in the valley of the Lower Danube; and the vast fertile regions of Asia Minor and Mesopotamia offered a still more tempting field for German enterprise. "Here was a wide area, unoccupied or occupied only by wandering tribes or semi-civilized peoples, under the nominal sway of a decadent Power.

Here the superfluous population of Germany might be disposed in promising settlements; German capital could be profitably employed in railways and irrigation works, in mining and agriculture; increasing prosperity would provide growing markets for German produce; a country rendered fit for husbandry and possessing untold mineral wealth would supply raw materials for manufacture and food for the toiling millions at home. To these economical incentives were added the political and other advantages to be drawn from a close connexion with Turkey. Financial and economic control over Turkey, European and Asiatic, meant not only the chance of utilizing excellent military material which, under German tuition, could be formed into a first-rate army; it meant also the control of South-Eastern Europe and the Eastern Mediterranean, the command of the Danube from source to mouth . . . the practical possession of Bagdad, and a road to the Persian Gulf; whence it would be easy to bring pressure to bear not only on Persia but on Russian territory east of the Caspian, and even on India."[1] All these dazzling possibilities were foreshadowed in the far-reaching scheme for the Bagdad Railway, which was intended ultimately to connect Berlin with the Persian Gulf. The scheme was started in 1888, when Turkey allowed a railway to be constructed from Ismidt (east of Constantinople) to Angora under German auspices, but the project of its extension to Bagdad and the Persian Gulf only took definite shape in 1903.

The German Navy.

The conception of a world-policy involved as its corollary the creation of a powerful navy. The victories of Königgrätz and Sedan familiarized the German people with the fatal notion that war was "a radical medicine for the ills of State,"[2] and would always cut the tangled knot of all their national difficulties. Prussia had been made by war—her only industry, Mirabeau has said, is war—and she had made Germany by war. It was therefore in accordance with her traditional methods that, in the pursuit of her new aims, Germany should wish to forge a new weapon and attain her objective by 'blood and iron.' To the ostensible purpose with which the German Navy was originally formed no objection could well be raised. "We are now vulnerable at sea," wrote a German Chancellor. "We have entrusted millions to the ocean, and with these millions the weal and woe of many of our countrymen. If we had not in good time provided protection for them . . . we should have been exposed to the danger of having one day to look on defencelessly while we were deprived of them. . . . We should have been placed in the position of being unable to employ and support a considerable number of our millions of inhabitants at home. The result would have been an economic crisis which might easily attain the proportions of a national catastrophe."[1] But there seemed good ground for apprehension that the real motive which prompted the rapid growth of a war-fleet was the desire to challenge Great Britain's supremacy of the seas. It was scarcely possible to entertain any other view after the open avowal in 1900 that "Germany must have a battle-fleet so strong that, even for the adversary possessing the greatest sea-power, a war against it would involve such dangers as to imperil his position in the world." The result was to inaugurate an era of acute naval rivalry between Germany and Great Britain, which poisoned the relations of the two countries and helped to provoke the present collision.

---

[1] G. W. Prothero, *German Opinion and German Policy before the War* (1916), 31-2.

[2] Treitschke, *Political Thought*, ed. Davis (1914), 148 *seq.*

Results of the Russo-Japanese War (1904).

The Russo-Japanese War (1904) affected profoundly the whole course of international politics—destroying for the time being the 'Balance of Power' on which had rested the European system. Hitherto the policy of the German Emperor had been cautious and restrained; but for the future he was to display greater self-assertion and to stimulate the warlike ardour of the German nation. The Triple Alliance was converted into an instrument of aggression, and the next ten years—a period never free from international complications—witnessed a succession of crises which on more than one occasion brought Europe to the brink of war. In order to appreciate the significance of the conflict between Russia and Japan, we must remember

---

[1] Bülow, *op. cit.* 17.

1904 — that in the nineteenth century Russia enjoyed enormous military prestige owing to the part she had played in the overthrow of Napoleon. The Crimean War showed that her strength was more imposing in appearance than in reality; none the less it was a cardinal principle of Bismarck's policy to maintain a good understanding with his Eastern neighbour, and the fear of Russia served as a wholesome check upon the activities of William II. But when the vast autocratic Empire was worsted by a young Asiatic State, "whose people fifty years before fought with bows and arrows," the effect on the European situation was far-reaching. Russia suffered immense losses of men; and she also lost valuable territory, the fortress of Port Arthur, and two fleets; but more disastrous than the material results of the war was the deadly blow to her prestige. She was still further weakened by domestic disturbances, and for the present therefore she was powerless to oppose resistance to the aggressive designs of the Central Powers.

The Triple Entente.

Another result of the Russo-Japanese War was to draw England and France closer together. The British Government welcomed an opportunity to renounce the 'splendid isolation' which had hitherto been the keystone of its policy. This momentous deflection in its traditional attitude was due to the anxiety felt during the Boer War lest a European coalition should be formed against us. The fear was probably ill-founded, for a European coalition against Great Britain was manifestly impossible while Germany maintained her grasp upon Alsace-Lorraine. "The irreconcilability of France," observes Prince Bülow, "is a factor that we must reckon with in our political calculations. It seems to me weakness to entertain the hope of a real and sincere reconciliation with France, so long as we have no intention of giving up Alsace-Lorraine. And there is no such intention in Germany."[1] Having resolved to secure an ally on the Continent, the choice for Great Britain necessarily lay between the Triple Alliance and the Dual Alliance. It has been said that for a time it was doubtful whether we would not gravitate towards the Triple Alliance. " Kinship and tradition seemed to beckon us towards Germany and Austria " ;[1] and with Germany this country had never been at war. But the personality of William II. inspired distrust, and other motives also prompted the decision of British statesmen in favour of the Dual Alliance. On her part France was no less ready to clasp hands with England. Now that the energies of Russia were paralyzed by her ill-fated struggle with Japan, the Republic was plunged back into the perilous isolation from which it had been rescued by the Dual Alliance. Colonial disputes which had hitherto kept the two Western Powers apart were amicably compromised under stress of the necessity for concerted action in European affairs. Great Britain acknowledged the claims of France to dominate Morocco, while in return France recognized the English occupation of Egypt ; and rival interests in other directions were skilfully reconciled. Thus was formed the Anglo-French Entente (April 1904) ;[2] and incidentally its history serves to show how easy it is for nations to come together in friendship, when there is an honest desire to smooth away difficulties and to arrive at a *modus vivendi*. If half the wars of history have been the result of deliberate aggression, the other half can surely be traced to misunderstandings and jealousies which could have been composed without armed conflict had those concerned been peaceably inclined.

---

[1] Bülow, *op. cit.* 69.

The Morocco Question : first phase (1905).

The strength of the Anglo-French Entente was soon to be tested in the Question of Morocco. For some years France had been engaged in the ' peaceful penetration ' of Morocco—the preliminary to its political annexation ; and she entered into compacts with Italy (1900), Great Britain (April 1904), and Spain (October 1904), in order to gain a free hand in its affairs. Now it was not denied that France " had a special interest in the development of affairs in Morocco," on account of its proximity to her North African possessions and owing to the fact that French trade in

---

[1] Rose, *Development of the European Nations* (ed. 1915), 590.

[2] The adhesion of Russia (August 1907) converted it into a Triple Entente.

1905 Morocco exceeded that of England or Germany. On the other hand, Germany could claim with fairness that she also had important economic interests in Morocco; and she was entitled in virtue of the Treaty of Madrid (1880) not to be excluded from any settlement affecting its integrity. The case for her intervention was strengthened by the fact that colonial expansion was vital to Germany, and the disposal of a vast new province was therefore not a matter which only concerned the Western Powers. But the peremptory manner in which Germany asserted her right to be heard aroused serious alarm; and the menacing attitude she assumed was evidently inspired by the great defeat of Russia at the battle of Mukden (March 1-10, 1905). On March 31 the German Emperor landed at Tangier, and proclaimed "in unequivocal language" the independence and sovereignty of Morocco. This was a challenge to France, but the French Government was unprepared for war, and in spite of the opposition of M. Delcassé, the Minister of Foreign Affairs, it accepted the German demand for an international Conference. Delcassé thereupon resigned; and the Conference met at Algeciras. After lengthy negotiations in which the danger of war was brought very near, the Convention of Algeciras (April 7, 1906) patched up a settlement. The sovereignty of the Sultan was formally recognized; the police organization and National Bank were placed under international control; and the principle of the open door for all countries was reasserted. Nevertheless France was left free to proceed with her 'peaceful penetration.' "We are neither victors nor vanquished," said the German Chancellor in his review of the situation. Germany had succeeded in forcing the Western Powers to substitute an international settlement for what she regarded as "the one-sided arrangement between England and France"; and she had also asserted her claim for consideration in "an affair of great international importance." But in so far as Morocco was intended to be a test of the stability of the Anglo-French Entente, then the German Government failed completely to sever the connexion or to sow discord between the two countries. The historical significance of the Morocco crisis thus lies in the fact that it was the first trial of strength between Germany and the Western Powers.

1911 —

Second phase: the Agadir incident (1911).

In the summer of 1911 the Morocco Question once more became acute. Owing to the anarchy in Morocco a French army occupied the capital (Fez). This was interpreted by Germany as a sign that France intended to proclaim a protectorate, and a German cruiser, the *Panther*, was dispatched to Agadir (July 1, 1911) on the pretext of looking after German interests. Whether Germany intended or not to annex Moroccan territory is disputed, but her action seemed to foreshadow a demand for a naval base at Agadir or Mogador. Great Britain intervened on the side of her ally, for apart from our obligations to France a German port on the Atlantic would have endangered the security of our commercial routes. The Chancellor of the Exchequer therefore intimated that any attempt to ignore British interests "would be a humiliation intolerable for a great country like ours to endure"; and for some weeks the danger of armed collision seemed imminent. The reason which induced Germany to moderate her demands is very obscure. It is generally attributed to a financial crisis,[1] but it is uncertain whether the German Government ever intended to force an issue over Morocco. Her real interests lay elsewhere; and, while she was prepared to go to war over the Eastern Question,[2] she was evidently willing to compromise over the occupation of Africa. The upshot of the negotiations was that Germany recognized a French protectorate over Morocco (November 4, 1911), and France surrendered the north-west part of French Congo. These terms provoked great dissatisfaction in both countries, yet the principle of 'compensation' was not in itself inequitable France, now in possession of the second colonial empire in the world, had gained a vast accession of territory in North Africa, as a set-off to which she had already made important concessions to other countries: to England in Egypt, to Italy in Tripoli, and to Spain in Tangier; and she now also made 'compensation' to Germany.

---

[1] Rose, *op. cit.* 623; G. Murray, *The Foreign Policy of Sir Edward Grey* (1915), 76.

[2] Cf. her ultimatum to Russia in 1909: *supra*, p. 274.

1911–14

The Great European War (1914).

The Agadir incident was followed by a great outburst of ill-feeling in Germany against 'the real enemy,' as England was called by the Conservative leader in the *Reichstag*, but gradually the tension seemed to relax. A strong attempt was made to improve Anglo-German relations, and to dispel by friendly discussion the mists of suspicion which had grown up between the two countries. It was stated by the English Prime Minister (December 6, 1911) that England had no secret engagement with any Power obliging her to take up arms, and he added: "We do not desire to stand in the light of any Power which wants to find its place in the sun. The first of British interests is, as it always has been, the peace of the world; and to its attainment British diplomacy and policy will be directed." The German Government was told that "we would in no circumstances be a party to any sort of aggression upon Germany." But the efforts for a friendly understanding with Germany made no headway; and Mr. Asquith in his speech at Cardiff (October 2, 1914) has accounted for their failure. "They asked us to pledge ourselves absolutely to neutrality in the event of Germany being engaged in war, and this, mark you, at a time when Germany was enormously increasing both her aggressive and defensive resources, and especially upon the sea. . . . To such a demand, but one answer was possible, and that was the answer we gave." While these negotiations were still pending, a fresh storm arose in the East, and the problem of the Balkans once more held the attention of the world. We have already dealt with the course of events which culminated in the aggrandizement of Serbia and the Greek acquisition of Salonika. These events, as we have seen, threatened the disruption of the Austro-Hungarian monarchy, and with it the fundamental object of German policy—the *Drang nach Osten*. For her Eastern projects Germany in 1914, as in 1909, was prepared to go the length of war. On the earlier occasion Russia gave way to the Central Powers, but in 1914 she refused to leave Serbia to her fate, and the Great European War was the sequel.

INDEX

Abdul Hamid II., 197, 272-3
Aberdeen Ministry, 38
Academic Legion, 131-2
Act of Confederation, 49, 53, 64
Adrianople, 193, 199, 278, 280
Adriatic, 185, 204, 279, 280
Ægean, 185, 200, 204, 278, 280
Africa, 15, 269, 284, 289, 291
Agadir, 291-2
Agram, 147-8, 157
Aix-la-Chapelle, 7, 219-222
Albania, 184, 194, 199, 200, 275-7, 279, 281
Alexander the Great, 29, 198
Alexander I., 6, 47-8, 54, 85, 127, 186, 188-92, 213-16, 218-19, 224, 238-240, 269
Alexander II., 81, 92-106, 112, 242, 266
Alexander III., 105, 107-111, 202-3, 270-1
Alexander (Bulgaria), 202-3
Alexander Karageorgevich, 207-9
Alexander (Serbia), 209
Alexandria, 193
Algeciras, 290
Algiers, 15
Ali of Janina, 184, 186-7
Alsace, 74, 78, 236, 249, 256-7, 264, 270, 288
Amphictyony, 213, 219
Anarchism, 103
Ancien Régime, 3, 5, 254
Angora, 286
Antwerp, 234
Arbiters of the Peace, 95
'Armed Peace,' 271-2
Armenians, 276
Arndt, 45, 61
Arta, 194
Asia, 127, 285-6
Asquith, Mr., 292
Augustenburg, 73
Ausgleich, 155-8, 235
Austria, 20, 33, 39, 40, c. ii. *passim*, 87, c. iv., c. v. *passim*, 183-6, 188, 193, 195-6, 201-2, 205, 209, c. vii. *passim*, 247, 250, 258, 265-70, 272, 274-5, 278-81, 289, 292
Austro-Prussian War, 71-75, 155, 182

'Bach's system,' 138, 152
Baden, 49, 54, 75, 219
Bagdad Railway, 286
Bakunin, 103
Balkan League, 277-81
Balkan States, c. vi., 221, 266-7, 270, 272-82, 292
Balkan Wars, 277-81
Baltic, 72
Banat, 147-8, 150
Barbary Pirates, 220
Batak, 200
Batthyány, 148-9, 151
Bavaria, 49, 54, 63-5, 75, 79, 193-4, 256
Bazarov, 100-1
Beaconsfield, Earl, 201
Belgium, 20, 21, 62, 181, 194, 211, 221, 229-35
Belgrade, 199, 202, 206, 281
Bem, J., 137, 150
Berlin, 44, 56, 64, 135, 264, 266-7, 286
Berry, Duke of, 8
Bessarabia, 194-5, 197
Beust, 155
Bismarck, 36, 62, 64, 66-80, 155, 196, 203, 236-237, 244, 255-71, 282-5, 288
'Black Partition,' 105
Black Sea, 38, 200-1
Blanc, Louis, 23, 26-8
Boer War, 288
Bohemia, 125, 133-5, 139, 151, 156, 158, 194
Bonapartism, 46
Bordeaux, 248, 255
Bosnia, 201, 204, 206, 208-9, 267, 272, 274-5, 277, 281
Bosphorus, 184, 193
Bourbons, 1-19, 39, 160, 171, 177, 180, 253, 270
Bourgeoisie, 22, 25-6, 56-57, 84, 115
Bremen, 44
Brünn, 137
Brussels, 232
Bucharest, 200
Budapest, 143, 281
Bulgaria, 194, 197-205, 208-9, 275-80
'Bulgarian Atrocities,' 200, 208
Bülow, 236-7, 261, 282, 284, 287-8, 290
Bulyghin Constitution, 119
Bundesrath, 74, 256
Burke, E., 101
Burschenschaft, 47
Byron, 186, 188, 240

'Cadets,' 121-4
Cameroons, 284
Canning, 188, 190-2, 216, 222, 226-8, 241
Canossa, 259
Capitalism, 23, 95, 113-15
Carbonari, 85, 164, 168, 187
Cardiff, 292
Carinthia, 125, 134
Carlowitz, 148
Carlsbad Decrees, 48, 52-3
Carniola, 125, 134
Castelfidardo, 181

Castlereagh, 188, 216, 218, 221-3, 225-7, 229, 238
Catharine the Great, 81, 83, 184, 192
Catholicism, 3, 4, 9-10, 17, 32-3, 37, 231, 245, 257-60
Catholics, the Old, 259
Cavour, 79-80, 172, 174-182
Centre, 258, 260
Chambre Introuvable, 6
Charlemagne, 43, 75
Charles I., 196-7
Charles II., 6
Charles X., 6, 8, 11, 12-17, 24, 25, 71, 87, 254
Charles Albert, 165, 169-75
Charles Felix, 165
Charter, the French, 5, 14, 15, 17, 18
Chateaubriand, 4, 10, 11, 12, 22, 226
Chernuishevsky, 101
Chlopicki, 241
Cicero, 84
Clericalism (French), 3, 12, 14, 18, 33, 34, 39, 177, 179, 244, 257, 268
Cobden, R., 262
Codrington, 193
Cologne, 62
Common Ministry, 155-6
Compact of Bordeaux, 252-3
Comte d'Artois, *see* Charles X.
Comte de Chambord, 16, 254
Comte de Paris, 254
Congo, 291
Congress of Berlin, 198, 201, 209, 267, 272, 285; of Paris, 38, 39, 176, 195; of Vienna, 17, 46, 49, 62, 161, 164, 170, 212, 217-18, 228, 238
Congresses, character of, 178
Conservatives, 18, 24, 64, 80, 260, 292
Constantine, 85, 241
Constantine, 243
Constantinople, 185, 189, 192-3, 199, 201, 204, 273, 278, 286
Cossacks, 243
County Assemblies, 140-3, 151-3, 157
Couza, Prince, 196
Cracow, 236
Crete, 194, 278
Crimean War, 37-8, 88-92, 176, 184, 194, 196-7, 207-8, 242, 288
Croatia, 131, 134, 140, 146 *seq.*, 194
Croats, *see* Croatia
Cronstadt, 271
Custozza, 149, 173
Czartoryski, 213
Czechs, *see* Bohemia

Dahlmann, 60
Dalmatia, 204
Danube, R., 38, 62, 183, 194-195, 200-1, 204-5, 285-6
Dardanelles, 192-3
De Serre, 8
Deák, F., 153-6
Decazes, 7, 8, 17
Decembrist Movement, 86-87, 92
Dedeagach, 280
Delcassé, 290
Delegations, 156
Democracy, 17, 26, 88, 107, 135, 249
Denmark, 60, 72-3, 194, 219, 257
Diebitsch, 193, 241
Diet (German), c. ii. *passim*
Dobrich, 279
Doctrinaires (French), 4 *seq.*
Drang nach Osten, 281, 285-6, 292
Drave, R., 149
Dresden, 66
Dual Alliance, 269-71, 288-9
Duma, 112, 118-24
Durazzo, 199
Dušan, 199, 204-5

East, Far, 119, 272; Near, c. vi., 272 *seq.*; Middle, 285-6
Eastern Question, c. vi., 211, 228, 267, 270, 272 *seq.*
Economics, 11, 17, 23, 26-8, 34-5, 94-5, 113-115, 130, 249, 261-2, 280
Edict of Emancipation, *see* Serfs
Egypt, 289, 291
'Eight Articles,' 229
'Eighteen Articles,' 234
'Eleven Points,' 117
Elizabeth, 213
Emigrés, 2, 11, 12
Encyclical, 173
England, 19, 33, 37, 39, 40, 43, 56, 59, 61, 70-1, 73, 94-5, 97, 113, 116, 140, 154, 164, 176, 183-184, 188-94, 196, 201-2, 208, c. vii. *passim*, 263, 270, 282, 285, 287-92
English Revolution (1688), 17
Enos, 278
Enver Bey, 278
Erfurt Parliament, 64
European Concert, 192, c. vii.
Exarchate, 200
Exhibition, the Great, 34
Expropriation Law, 237

Factory system, effects of, 114
Favre, J., 248
February Patent, 153
Ferdinand I., 164-6, 222-3
Ferdinand II., 171, 173
Ferdinand VII., 226
Ferdinand (Bulgaria), 203
Ferrara, 172
Fez, 291
Finland, 124
Flemings, 231
France, c. i., 43, 56, 59, 61-2, 69, 70-1, 73-8, 84-5, 87, 97, 132, 160, 174, 176, 180-2, 188, 192-4, cc. vii. and viii. *passim.*
Francis II., 62, 126-8
Francis Joseph, 40, 155
Franco-Prussian War, 41, 69, 75-8, 182, 263-5, 270
Frankfort, 44, 58, 60, 74
Frankfort Assembly, 58-63, 68, 133-4, 137
Frederick II. (the Great), 34, 61, 63
Frederick William III., 48, 54, 62
Frederick William IV., 55-6, 58, 60, 63-5, 67-8
Free trade, 33, 260, 262-4
French Republic (Second), 25-9, 248
French Republic (Third), 41, 247-55, 257, 265, 268, 289
French Revolution (1789), 2, 5, 9-10, 11, 15, 16, 18-20, 25, 28, 42, 59, 84, 93, 139-41, 145, 160-2, 205, 210, 217, 225, 229, 248, 250, 255
French Revolution (1830), 16-19, 25, 55, 165, 221, 232, 240
French Revolution (1848),

19, 25-8, 56-7, 130, 142, 221

Gaj, L., 147
Galicia, 130, 156, 235-6
Gambetta, 248
Gapón, 117-18
Garibaldi, 174, 180-2
Gastein, 73
Gentz, 62, 212-13
'Genuine Russians,' 120-1
George I., 194
George III., 33, 170
German Colonies, 284-5, 290
German Navy, 286-7
Germanic Confederation, c. ii.
Germany, 20, c. ii., 84, 114, 125-7, 133, 138-9, 141, 144, 161, 219, 221, 235, c. viii. *passim*
Gioberti, 170, 173
Gladstone, W., 162, 200
Goethe, 45, 48
Goito, 172
Görgei, 150-1
'Gotha' party, 64
Grand Design, 213-15
Greco-Turkish War, 194
Greece, 160, 185-94, 197, 201-2, 275-81, 283, 292
Grossdeutschen, 258
Grotius, 211
Guelphs, 159, 170, 258
Guizot, 18, 19, 21-5

Habsburgs, *see* Austria
Hague Peace Conferences, 271-2
Hamburg, 44
Hanover, 63-5, 74, 258
Hardenberg, 54, 61
Heidelberg, 58
Hellenism, 186
Henri IV., 213-14
'Henri V.,' *see* Comte de Chambord
Herzegovina, 200-1, 204, 208-9, 267, 274-5
Hesiod, 126
Hesse, 51, 65-6, 74-5, 219
Hetairia, 85, 187
Hohenstaufen, 44
Hohenzollern, 258
Holland, 20, 206, 211, 221, 229-35
Holstein, *see* Schleswig
Holy Alliance, 213-17, 219, 266
Holy Roman Empire, 43-5, 49, 159, 211
Hungary, 64, 87, 125, 129, 131, 133-4, 136-58, 186, 194, 205, 281. *See* Austria, Magyars

'Illyrism,' 147-8
Imperialists (French), 254
India, 184, 286
Industrial Revolution, 113, 129, 245
Innsbruck, 132, 148-9
Insurance, 262
International Law, 211, 274
'Internationale,' 102
Ionian Islands, 194
Ireland, 181, 185
Isaiah, 211
Ismidt, 286
Italia Irredenta, 268
Italy, 20, 21, 39, 43-4, 73-4, 76, 79-80, 125, 138-9, 141, 152, c. v., 196, 221, 229, 247, 258, 265, 267-9, 277-8, 280, 289, 291

Jacobinism, 54, 126, 216, 250
James II., 6, 14
Janina, 184, 186-7, 278
Janissaries, 206
Japanese War, 116, 119, 283, 287-9
Jellacic, 132, 148-50
Jemmapes, 16
Jena, 46-7, 76
Jesuits, 3, 12, 13, 259
Jews, 111, 120, 122, 124, 197-8, 219, 276, 279
John, Archduke, 59
John Asên, 199
Joseph II., 34, 140-1, 184, 205
July Monarchy, *see* Orleans
Justices of the Peace, 59, 97-8

Kant, 214
Kapolna, 149
Kara George, 206-7
Karageorgevich, 207-9
Kaunitz, 217, 221, 228
Kavalla, 280
Khrustalév, 119
Kiamil Pacha, 278
Kirk Kilissé, 278
Kollár, 145
Königgrätz, *see* Sadowa
Korais, 186
Kossovo, 205
Kossuth, 142-50, 154
Kotzebue, 47, 224
Kremsier, 138
Kropotkin, Prince, 103
Kulturkampf, 258-60

Labour Parliament, 27, 119
Lafayette, 15
Laibach, 222-5, 227
Laissez-faire, 261-2
Lamartine, 21, 25
'Land and Liberty,' 105
Land Captains, 108-9, 111
Language Question, (Belgium) 231, (Germany) 236, 257, (Hungary) 141 *seq.*, (Poland) 237-8
Lassalle, 260
Latour, 136
Lavroff, 103
'Law of Associations,' 237
'Law of Nationalities,' 157
League of Four Kings, 65
League of Three Emperors, 266-7, 269
League of Three Kings, 64
'Legitimacy,' 4, 17, 150, 166, 181, 188, 191, 258
Legitimists (French), 34, 39, 254
Leipzig, 47
Lemberg, 236
Leo XIII., 260
Leopold II., 140
Leopold (Belgium), 234
Liberalism, 2, 7, 10-13, 15, 16, 18, 19, 31, 34, 41, 48, 54-8, 67, 70, 72, 80-1, 87, 99, 127-8, 136, 139, 166, 170, 175, 209, 215, 224, 232, 240, 244, 260
Liége, 230-1
Limburg, 234-5
List, F., 285
Lithuania, 240-1
Lombardy, 152, 161, 163, 176, 178, 222
Loris-Melikoff, 106-7
Lorraine, *see* Alsace
Louis XIV., 14, 34, 69, 283
Louis XVI,, 14, 25
Louis XVIII., 5, 6, 13, 14
Louis Philippe, 16-26, 36, 57, 165, 203, 233, 242, 254
Louvel, 8
Lübeck, 44
Lucan (quoted), 251
Lucca, 163
Lulé Burgas, 278

Luxemburg, 233-5
Lyons, 23

Maassen, 78
Macedonia, 187, 199-201, 204, 275-81
Machiavelli, 160
MacMahon, 254
Magenta, 152
Magyars, 133-4, 136-7, 139 *seq.*, 194, 236, 281
Mahmud, 187, 192
Main, 74-5, 77-8
Mainz, 48
Malmoe, 60, 72
Manin, D., 176
'March Days,' 56, 68
'March Laws,' 143, 153-5
Marches, The, 182
Marches, The Eastern, 236, 256-7
Maria Theresa, 141
Marie-Louise, 62, 162
Martignac, 13, 14
Marx, K., 46, 52, 54, 58-9, 115, 128-9, 132, 260
Maximilian, 40, 41
'May Laws,' 259-60
Mazzini, 103, 129, 162, 164, 167-9, 174, 180, 264
Mediterranean, 183-4, 193, 220, 280, 286
Mehemet Ali, 21, 184, 187-188, 192-3
Mercantilism, 264
Mesopotamia, 285-6
Messina, 171
Mesta, R., 280
Metternich, 46-54, 62, 126-9, 131, 159-61, 165-6, 168-9, 171, 186, 188, 191-3, 216, 219, 220, 223-4, 227, 240, 269
Metz, 78, 257
Mexico, 40-1
Michael Obrenovich III., 207-9
Middle Kingdom, 75
Midhat Pasha, 199
Midia, 278
Milan, 149, 161, 172-3
Milan Obrenovich II., 207
Milan Obrenovich IV., 202, 208-9
Militarism, 58, 283
Miliutin, 244-5
Milosh Obrenovich I., 207
Mir, 82, 95-6, 98, 123
Mirabeau, 286
Mirsky, Prince, 117
Mischar, 206
Modena, 160, 162-3, 165, 173, 179
Moderates, 4 *seq.*
Mogador, 291
Mohammedans, 38, 183-5, 187, 189, 206, 285
Moldavia, *see* Roumania
Molé, 24
Moltke, 214, 265
Monaco, 219
Monastir, 278, 280
Monroe Doctrine, 40
Montenegro, 194, 204, 208-9, 275, 278-9
Morea, 185 *seq.*
Morocco, 289-92
Moscow, 89, 100, 110, 114, 116, 118
Motz, 79
Mukden, 290

Naples, 160, 162-6, 168, 171-3, 177, 180-2, 222-223, 232
Napoleon I., 1, 7, 10, 21, 29-32, 38, 42, 44-5, 48, 61-2, 76, 89, 112, 162, 207, 210, 212, 215, 217, 219, 238, 250, 269, 283, 288
Napoleon III., 2, 28-41, 71, 73, 75-8, 176-81, 196, 244, 247, 254, 257
Napoleonic legend, 29-30, 39, 40, 176
National Guard, 12, 25, 131, 143, 250-1
National workshops, 28
Nationalism, 39, 42, 136, 139, 196, 221, 228, 263-264, 274, 283
  compulsory, 144 *seq.*, 236, 238, 273
Nationalities, submerged, 20, 39, 144 *seq.*, 236, 238, 256-7
Navarino, 192
Nazim Pacha, 278
Nemanja, Stephen, 204
Nemours, Duke of, 233
Netherlands, *see* Holland
New Caledonia, 251
New Guinea, 284
Nice, 39, 180
Nicholas I., 37, 86-93, 98-100, 107, 150, 191-2, 240-2
Nicholas II., 107, 111-24, 271
Nihilism, 93, 98, 100-6, 112, 266
Non-intervention, theory of, 188, 190, 192, 221 *seq.*
Norway, 221
Novara, 165, 174
Novi Bazar, 275
Novosiltsoff, 240

Obradovich, 205
Obrenovich, 207-9
Ochrida, 278, 280
October Diploma, 152-3, 155
October Manifesto, 120, 121
Octobrists, 121-4
Olmütz, 66, 136, 138
Orange, House of, 229, 232-4
Ordinances, 15
Orleanists, 34, 253-4
Orleans monarchy, 1, 16, 18-26
Orthodox Church, 37, 184-186, 189, 200, 245
Otho, 193-4
Otto I., 43

Pacific Islands, 284
Paine, T., 210
Palacky, 134
Palmerston, 242
Panther, 291
Papacy, 33, 39, 43, 159, 160, 170-3, 177, 179, 181, 258-60, 268
Papal Infallibility, 259
Papal states, 160, 162-3, 165, 179, 181-2
Paris, 6, 15, 16, 19, 20, 25, 26, 35, 56-7, 78, 104, 135, 142, 221, 248-252, 255, 264-5, 271
Parisian Commune, 102, 248-52, 266
Parma, 160, 162-3, 165, 173, 179
Pashas, 184
Peace, universal, 210 *seq.*, 271
Pehleve, 116-17
Perczel, 150
Persia, 286
Personality in history, 29
Pestel, P., 85-6
Peter the Great, 81, 184, 192
Peter III., 93
Peter (Serbia), 208-9
Petrograd, 83, 85-6, 103, 117, 224, 267, 274

Philip II., 87-9, 229
Philippopolis, 202
Piacenza, 173
Piedmont, 33, 39, 80, 162-163, 165 *seq.*, 281
Pirot, 201
Pitt, 214
Pius IX., 170-4, 260
Plebiscites, 28, 41, 80, 179, 182, 257
Plevna, 197
Plombières, 177
Pobêdonostev, 107
Pogróms, 120-1
Poland, 20, 21, 39, 40, 55, 71, 73, 87, 100, 121, 124, 127, 195, 213, 233, 235-46, 256, 258, 270
Polignac, 14, 18, 270
Port Arthur, 288
Posen, 236-8, 256, 258
Pragmatic Sanction, 156
Prague, 134-5, 137
Pressburg, 129
Primato, 170, 173
Prince Imperial, 254
Protocol of London, 72-3
    Petrograd, 192
    Troppau, 225
Protocols of January, 233-234
Proudhon, 23
Prussia, 20, 39, c. ii. *passim*, 84, 126-7, 179, 192, 217, 219, 220-1, 224, 226, 233, 236-9, 241, 244, 250, 256-7, 260-1, 266-7, 286
Pruth, river, 195, 197

Quadruple Alliance, 213, 217 *seq.*

Radetzky, 132, 149, 172
'Red Sunday,' 117-18
'Reds,' 242-3
Reformation, 44, 47, 88, 211
Reichstag, 74, 131, 258, 261, 292
Reinsurance Compact, 269
Republicans, 15, 16, 23, 24, 34, 46, 169, 174, 255
Revolution of 1848—(Austria) 128 *seq.*; (France) 25 *seq.*; (Germany) 53 *seq.*; (Hungary) 138 *seq.*; (Italy) 171 *seq.*
Rhine, 10, 39, 62, 75-6, 179, 217, 270
Richelieu (Cardinal), 283
Richelieu, 2, 6, 7, 8, 270
Rieti, 165
'Right to work,' 23, 27
Romagna, 179
Romania Irredenta, 194
Rome, 10, 43, 75, 84, 93, 171, 174, 177, 180-2, 251, 268-9
Roumania, 37, 38, 39, 150, 186-7, 189, 192-8, 201, 208, 277, 279
Roumanians (Austria), 140, 147, 149, 151, 158, 194
Roumelia (Eastern), 200-2
Rousseau, 27, 210
Rudolf I., 125
Russia, 20, 37, 39, 40, 63, 71, 73, c. iii., 134, 144, 150-1, 176, 183-4, 186, 188-97, 199-203, 205-9, c. vii. *passim*, 266-7, 269-72, 274-5, 283, 286-192
Russia, Little, 236
Russo-Japanese War, *see* Japan
Russo-Turkish War (1828), 193, 240
Russo-Turkish War (1877), 194, 197, 200, 208-9
Ruthenes, 140
Ruthenia, 236

Sadowa, 58, 70, 73, 76-7, 155, 265, 286
Safarik, 145
Salasco, 173
Salonika, 278, 280-1, 292
Savoy, 39, 177, 180
Savoy, House of, *see* Piedmont
Saxe-Weimar, 47-8, 53-4
Saxons (Austria), 147, 149, 151
Saxony, 63-5, 79
Scandinavia, 43
Scheldt, 230
Schiller, 48
Schleswig, 60, 72-5, 236, 256-7
Schmerling, 153
Schmoller, 262
Schwarzenberg, 61, 65, 137-8, 151-2
Schwechat, 137, 149
Scutari, 278-9
Secret Societies, 85, 164, 168, 187, 240
Sedan, 41, 58, 78, 264-5, 286
Serbia, 194, 197-9, 201-2, 204-9, 274-81, 292
Serbs (Austria), 140, 146 *seq.*, 194
Serfs (Austria), 130, 136, 138
Serfs (Hungary), 143
Serfs (Roumania), 197
Serfs (Russian), 81-3, 86, 93-9, 100, 108, 113, 244-5
Siberia, 83, 86, 88, 91, 103
Sicily, 84, 171, 173, 180-2
Silistria, 279
Simeon, 198, 204
Skiernewice, 269
Slave trade, 220
Slavs, 85, 132-6, 145 *seq.*, 184, 194, 198, 266-7, 275, 281
Slivnitsa, 202
Slovaks, 139, 145-6, 148, 157-8, 194
Slovenes, 134, 194
Smith, Adam, 78
Social Democracy (German), 257, 260-3, 266
Social Democrats (Russia), 114-16, 118, 123
Socialism, 23, 26-7, 103, 115-16, 250, 257, 261-2
Society of the North, 85-6
    South, 85-6
Solferino, 152, 155, 178
Spain, 10, 19, 40, 43, 78, 87-9, 164, 206, 226, 229, 289, 291
Sparta, 283
'Splendid isolation,' 288
St. Pierre, Abbé de, 214
Stambuloff, 203-4
Stein, 53-4, 61
Stepniak, 101, 110, 112
Stolýpin, 122
Strafford, 70
Strassburg, 78, 257
Strikes, 116, 118-19
Styria, 125, 134
Sully, 213
Sweden, 219, 221
Syndicalism, 27
Széchenyi, 142, 146

Talleyrand, 6
Tangier, 290-1
Tatar-Bazardjik, 200
Terrorism, 105, 112, 116
Thessaly, 187, 194
Thiers, 18, 19, 21, 22, 24, 25, 253-4, 257
Third Section (Police), 87-88, 105
Thrace, 275, 278, 280
Thun, Count, 135

Togo, 119
Togoland, 284
Toulon, 271
Trade Unions, 23, 35, 116-18
Trajan, 194
Transylvania, 131, 134, 143, 147, 149, 150-1, 196
Treaties of Bucharest, 195, 202, 279-80
  London, 192, 278, 280
Treaty of Adrianople, 193, 195, 207
  Akkerman, 192
  Alliance, 218 *seq.*
  Berlin, 201, 209
  Frankfort, 78, 248
  Kutchuk Kainardji, 195
  Madrid, 290
  Paris, 38, 196
  Prague, 74, 257
  San Stefano, 200-1, 209
  Tilsit, 269
Tricolour flag, 254
Trieste, 280
Triple Alliance, 267-9, 282, 287-9
Triple Entente, 289-91
Tripoli, 278, 291
Trnovo, 199
Troppau, 222-5
Tsushima, 119
Tunis, 269
Turgenev, 100-1
Turkey, 37, 38, c. vi. *passim*, 272-81, 285-6
Tuscany, 160, 162-3, 171-2, 174, 179
'Twenty-Four Articles,' 234-5
Two Sicilies, *see* Naples
Tyrol, 268

Ukraine, 236
Ultra-Royalists, 2-18, 226
Umbria, 182
Union for Social Politics, 262
Union of Unions, 119
United States, 31, 40-1, 59, 82, 84, 213
Universities, 3, 46-8, 88, 92, 104, 108, 128, 130, 196, 236, 259
Uskub, 278, 280

Velbužd, 199
Venetia, 74, 161, 172-3, 176, 222
Venice, 161, 172-4, 182
Venizelos, 197
Verona, 226-8
Versailles, 78, 249-52
Viborg Manifesto, 122
Victor Emmanuel I., 162, 165
Victor Emmanuel II., 174, 177-8, 181, 267
Vielopolski, 242-3
Vienna, 44, 127, 129-37, 139, 142-3, 149, 150, 153, 168, 171, 227, 267, 281
Világos, 151
Villafranca, 178
Villèle, 8-14, 18, 70
Vlachs, 276-7
Voltaire, 43, 83
Vorparlament, 58
Vosges, 265
Wallachia, *see* Roumania
Walloons, 231
Walpole, 11
War, 286, 289
War of Liberation, 45-6, 49, 61, 127, 214, 238
War, The Great European, 272-92
Warsaw, 238-9, 241
Wartburg Festival, 47
Waterloo, 217
Wellington, 14, 187, 192-3, 222, 226
Weltpolitik, 264, 272, 282 *seq.*
'Whites,' 242-3
Widdin, Pasha of, 206
'Will of the People,' 105
William I. (Germany), 67, 73, 78, 266
William I. (Holland), 232-5
William II., 203, 264, 269, 274, 283, 285, 287-90
William III., 17
Windischgrätz, 132, 135, 137, 149
Witte, 113
Würtemberg, 49, 54, 63-5, 75, 79, 224, 256

'Young Italy,' 167
'Young Turks,' 273-4, 277
Ypsilanti, 186-7

Zassulic, Vera, 105
Zemstvos, 98, 104-6, 108-111, 117, 119
Zollverein, 78-9
Zubátoff, 116, 117
Zurich, 102-3

THE END

Printed in Great Britain by R. & R. Clark, Limited, *Edinburgh.*

BY THE SAME AUTHOR

The Economic History of England

The Middle Ages

FOURTH EDITION

DEMY 8VO, CLOTH. PRICE **15/-** NET. (*By Post, Price* 15*s.* 6*d.*)

SOME PRESS OPINIONS

"Mr. Lipson has produced a work of exceptional importance for the teacher and student of English economic history, one which in many of its parts will have to be taken account of also by the specialist in the field. . . . Nothing better has been written on mediæval English towns, fairs, markets, and gilds than is to be found in this history. . . . The comprehensiveness, thoroughness, and accuracy of Mr. Lipson's work, and the wealth of illustration and reference with which it abounds, will cause it to take precedence of the older history in many of the subjects treated. . . . He does what Green aimed to accomplish with insufficient knowledge—to describe the life of the humbler folk among the people of England."—Professor C. M. ANDREWS in *The American Economic Review.*

"This admirable work marks a distinct advance in the writing of Economic History. . . . The author has boldly adopted a new point of view. . . . He discards political development as much as possible, and treats economic history as an independent subject of study."—Dr. CUNNINGHAM in *The Cambridge Review.*

"Excellent discussions in which Mr. Lipson adds appreciably to knowledge. . . . Mr. Lipson can make his point against no less a mediævalist than Mary Bateson."—Dr. CLAPHAM in *The Economic Journal.*

"Let us begin by giving thanks for a really good book. Mr. Lipson has produced, in 552 closely packed pages, an admirable account of the economic development of England from the seventh to the sixteenth century. This economic history is scholarly, making critical use of all the latest publications in the way of sources; it is dispassionate, with an impartiality between conflicting and verified theories as laudable as it is rare; it is original, in the completeness with which it abandons the framework of reigns, and even of centuries, treating the whole period in eleven subject chapters. . . . We think Mr. Lipson may congratulate himself on having put together what is, for the moment, the best authenticated description of the economic development of the England from which we have sprung. . . . Gratitude to Mr. Lipson impels us to say that every library in the United States, as well as every one in the British Empire, ought immediately to get this book."—*The New Statesman.*

"An economic history of England that will undoubtedly take rank as the standard work upon its subject. Mr. Lipson's investigation into the conditions of English life from the Conquest to the Tudor period is the fullest which has yet been presented under one cover. . . . Writers desirous of dealing with the ancient customs of this country will henceforward find Mr. Lipson's cautious and thorough inquisitions quite indispensable. . . . A masterly review of the economics of mediæval England."—*The Outlook.*

"Mr. Lipson's book will be of permanent value, and we are grateful to him for it. . . . Where he theorizes independently he shows a trenchant common-sense and freshness of vision."—*The Nation.*

"His book, allow me to say, is indispensable."—*The New Age.*

"A rich storehouse."—*The Saturday Review.*

"It is seldom that one comes across a book so excellent in every way as this study by Mr. Lipson. . . . We cannot praise it too highly."—*The English Review.*

"He adopts the historic attitude, and the care and completeness of his research are beyond praise. It is, in fact, a book which every student of our national history and economy ought to read and will have to consult."—*The Morning Post.*

"His reading and his acquaintance with original sources are extensive; his criticism is acute; and his capacity for marshalling vast arrays of facts is remarkable."—*The Times.*

"A work of the first importance, and, in several sections, peculiarly apposite and valuable at this time, when the reconstruction of our national economic policy is a task that will be imminent as soon as, or perhaps before, the War is over."—*The Globe.*

"It is a pleasure to find an economic historian who can deal with his subject in a manner at once dispassionate, authoritative, and yet interesting. . . . If the succeeding volumes equal the first in merit, we seem likely to witness the birth of an economic classic."—*The Manchester Courier.*

"So much purely destructive work has been done by modern historians . . . that it is refreshing to meet with an author who boldly faces the difficult and somewhat thankless task of piecing together the shattered fragments of our knowledge. . . . A most important contribution to the branch of history with which it deals."—*The Glasgow Daily Herald.*

"The facts handled are, in the circumstances, many and varied, but they are marshalled with ability and presented in a literary guise which serves to sustain the reader's interest throughout. A pleasant feature of the work is its judicial fairness."—*Aberdeen Journal.*

"By far the best full account of economic organization in England during the Middle Ages."—*The Highway.*

"Probably the most valuable, certainly the most fascinating part of the book is the two chapters dealing respectively with the Gild Merchant and with the Craft Gilds and Journeyman Gilds. The latter, a chapter of over a hundred pages, is at once the most thorough and the most interesting description of these great organizations that has recently appeared in English. . . . A picture of strenuous life and ordered industry that it would be hard to surpass. Social reformers of all schools should study these two chapters with care."—*Catholic Book Notes.*

"Written with a clarity and preciseness which bespeaks a mastery of its various subjects. . . . A volume of exceptional interest and scholarly research."—*The Journal of Education.*

"Represents a remarkable achievement. . . . Will win for itself a distinct place of its own. For the period covered there is no other single volume known to us which is so complete."—*The University Extension Bulletin.*

"Mr. Lipson has given us a book to be thankful for."—*The Holborn Review.*

"Mr. Lipson has executed his task in a way which must render future students of the subject his debtors. . . . Treated with a comprehensive knowledge and a solidity of judgment which mark the author as one of our safest and most helpful guides in the study of England's economic history."—*Studies.*

"An important work which bids fair to become a standard text-book on English economic history. . . . We can cordially commend this book to both teachers and students."—*School World.*

"We congratulate Mr. Lipson on an excellent piece of work. It is designed principally for the student, but we warmly recommend the book to that growing body of general readers who interest themselves in the social history of our nation."—*Warrington Examiner.*

"We have read this book with keen interest. It goes to the foundations of English civilization. . . . Invaluable to the student, and most attractive to the ordinary reader."—*The Echo and S. Leinster Advertiser.*

"It is sure to rank as a standard work—perhaps *the* standard work—upon this phase of English social evolution. . . . Written in plain, clear English, it presents its facts in an able and convincing way. The author has the true historic spirit of detachment from pet theories or cherished sentiments. . . . Readers who easily take fright at the word 'economic' may suppose that this must be a dry book. But even the dabbler in historic studies will find it far from uninteresting, while to the serious student it is simply indispensable."—*The Times of India.*

"Mr. Lipson has made a most valuable contribution to Economic History. His book . . . will probably be of greater value than other general works on the subject."—*Pioneer* (Allahabad).

"The whole book is a fascinating one."—*Madras Mail.*

"A work arranged with splendid clearness. . . . This is history worth reading."—*The Age* (Melbourne).

"A solid piece of work, thoroughly well carried out. The serious student of economic development will find it indispensable, while those who regard the history of English institutions as a personal heritage will derive both pleasure and profit from exploring its pages."—*The Commonweal.*

OCT 2 6 1992

[illegible]

D359.L7 1928
Europe in the nineteenth century
3 0629 0060483 9

D
359
L7
1928